

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARIES

A standard linear barcode consisting of vertical black lines of varying widths on a white background.

3 1761 00450404 9

HANDBOUND
AT THE



UNIVERSITY OF
TORONTO PRESS



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

<http://www.archive.org/details/publications29camduoft>

(43)
THREE BOOKS

OF

POLYDORE VERGIL'S ENGLISH HISTORY,
COMPRISING THE REIGNS
OF
HENRY VI., EDWARD IV., AND RICHARD III.

FROM AN EARLY TRANSLATION,

PRESERVED AMONG THE MSS. OF THE OLD ROYAL LIBRARY IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM.

EDITED BY

SIR HENRY ELLIS, K.H.

"Ornatissime Polydore, Opera tua sunt eleganter et feliciter excusa."
Erasmi Epist. sol. Lugd. Bat. 1706, Ep. DCCLX, 5 Sept. 1525.



LONDON:

PRINTED FOR THE CAMDEN SOCIETY,

BY JOHN BOWYER NICHOLS AND SON, PARLIAMENT STREET.

M.DCCCXLIV.

1330

20
20
20
20

[NO. XXIX.]

COUNCIL
OF
THE CAMDEN SOCIETY,
FOR THE YEAR 1844.

President,

THE RIGHT HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE, F.S.A.

THOMAS AMYOT, ESQ. F.R.S., Treas. S.A. *Director.*
JOHN BRUCE, ESQ. F.S.A. *Treasurer.*
JOHN PAYNE COLLIER, ESQ. F.S.A.
THE LORD ALBERT CONYNGHAM, K.C.H., F.S.A.
C. PURTON COOPER, ESQ. Q.C., D.C.L., F.R.S., F.S.A.
T. CROFTON CROKER, ESQ. F.S.A., M.R.I.A.
SIR HENRY ELLIS, K.H., F.R.S., Sec. S.A.
HENRY HALLAM, ESQ. M.A., F.R.S., V.P.S.A.
THE REV. JOSEPH HUNTER, F.S.A.
SIR FREDERIC MADDEN, K.H., F.R.S., F.S.A.
THOMAS JOSEPH PETTIGREW, ESQ. F.R.S., F.S.A.
THOMAS STAPLETON, ESQ. F.S.A.
WILLIAM J. THOMS, ESQ. F.S.A., *Secretary.*
ALBERT WAY, ESQ. M.A., DIR. S.A.
THOMAS WRIGHT, ESQ. M.A., F.S.A.

The COUNCIL of the CAMDEN SOCIETY desire it to be understood that they are not answerable for any opinions or observations that may appear in the Society's publications; the Editors of the several Works being alone responsible for the same.

P R E F A C E.

POLYDORE VERGIL, otherwise named de Castello, was a native of Urbino in Italy ; born in the latter half of the fifteenth century, and educated in the University of Bologna. Of his family we know but little. Burton, who wrote the History of Leicestershire, says his father's name was George Vergil ;* he himself tells us that Antony Vergil, his great-grandfather, taught philosophy at Paris ; and he had a younger brother whom he mentions with affection, John Matthew Vergil, a professor of Philosophy at Pavia,† who died at a premature age. He had also a

* See Burton's MS. as quoted in Nichols's Hist. of Leicestershire, vol. iii. pt. i. p. 538.

† “Habes enim (prout probe scis) Antonium Vergilium proavum nostrum Archetypon, qui medicæ etiam rei ac astrologiae peritissimus olim apud Gallos, in Lutetia Parisiorum, philosophiam docuit, quam tu Patavii in præsenti publicè profiteris.

“ Non est infima utique laus, duos ex Vergiliana familia viros in duobus totius orbis præcipuis gymnasiiis, haud longo temporis intervallo, professores bonarum disciplinarum non absque nominis gloria publicitus extitisse. Sed tu qui proavum jam longe relinquis, efficies (spero) ut aliquando posteritas

kinsman of the name of Adrian de Castello, of whom more will be said hereafter.

Polydore himself was first known to the literary world by the publication of a Collection of Proverbs, “Proverbiorum Libellus,” printed at Venice in 1498, gathered chiefly from Latin writers, and dedicated to Guido Ubaldo then Duke of Urbino.* It was the first attempt of its kind, and the author was subsequently not a little mortified when Erasmus claimed that same priority for his “Adagia.” Polydore Vergil gently reproached him in the preface to his next work: Erasmus protested his unacquaintance with Vergil’s previous book; and Polydore expunged the censure. Of this literary collision Polydore’s biographers have said more than was sufficient. It created a friendship between these eminent scholars which lasted to the close of Erasmus’s life, cemented by the congeniality of their pursuits, and evidenced no where more strongly on Erasmus’s part than in his Correspondence.†

dicat, fuisse olim Polydorum quendam, qui illum Joannem Matthæum Vergilium a puero bonis moribus atque disciplinis nutrierat. Vale, Londini nonis Decembris, An. M. D. XVII.”

* Other editions of the “Proverbiorum Libellus” were 4^{to}, Ven. 1506; Argentor. 1510; 8 Basle, 1524, 1532; 12^o 1536, and 8^{vo} 1541 and 1550. To the edition of 1536 is subjoined a short commentary upon the Lord’s Prayer, afterwards, about 1554, said to have been printed separately.

† See particularly the letters DCCLX, DCCCXV, DCCCI, MCLXXVI, in Erasmi Epist. fol. Lugd. Bat. 1706.

In 1499 Polydore Vergil published his second work, a Treatise “de Inventoribus Rerum.” This also was the first publication of its kind, subsequent to the revival of Literature. It gained him great reputation; was afterwards much enlarged by its author; passed through numerous editions in different countries;* and was translated into several of the modern languages of Europe.†

* “Polydori Vergili Vrbinatis de Inventoribus Rerum, Libri tres,” 4to. Ven. 1499; reprinted there in 1503. This work was increased to eight books in the Basle edition of 1521, followed by other editions from the same place in 1524, 1545, 1550, 1554, and 1570, in 8^{vo} and 12^{mo}; printed at Leyden in 1544, 8^{vo}; at Amsterdam, 8^o, 1571, and by Dan. Elzevir, 12^o 1651 and 1662; Rome, 1576, 8^o; Lyons, 1586, 12^o; Frankfort, 1599; Geneva, 1604; and Argentorat. 1606, 8^o and 12^o.

† Two editions of an Italian translation of this work, by Pietro Lauro of Modena, occur, 8^o Ven. 1543 and 1545. A Spanish translation by Fr. Thamar Medina, appeared in 8^{vo} 1551.

Wood in his *Athenæ Oxonienses*, edit. Bliss, vol. iii. col. 435, says, that Bale translated Polydore Vergil’s work “de Rerum Inventoribus” in the time of Edward VI. but in rude and old English. He does not say whether this translation was published. Three if not four editions of an Abridgement, however, in English, appeared much about that time; viz. One, “An Abridgements of the Notable Woorke of Polidore Vergile. Conteining the deuisers and fyrske fynders oute as well of Artes, Ministeries, Feautes, and ciuill ordinaunces, as of the Rites and Ceremonies commonly vsed in the churche: and the original beginnyng of the same. Compendiouslye gathered by Thomas Langley.” Dedicated to Sir Antonye Denny. “Imprynted at London by Richard Grafton, Printer to the Prince of Grace, the xvi. daie of Aprill, the yere of our Lorde M.D.XLVI. Cum priuilegio ad imprimendum solum.” Square 12^{mo}. Printed also “xxv. Januarie,” 1546, which stands as a second edition. A third, “Imprinted at London by Richard Grafton,

Soon after the production of this Treatise we find Polydore holding the office of chamberlain to Pope Alexander the Sixth, by whom, in or soon after 1501, he was sent to England as sub-collector of the tribute called Peter-Pence, under the auspices of Adrian de Castello his kinsman, already mentioned, who had been raised to the purple under the title of Cardinal S^{ti}. Chrysogoni, and who was his superior in the office of treasurer and collector of the Papal tribute.*

What was Polydore's immediate reception at the English Court is not recorded, but he is known to have been recommended to Henry the Seventh by those who were acquainted with the king, whilst Earl of Richmond, in his exile. † Polydore's relation, the Cardinal S^{ti}. Chrysogoni, Printer to the Kynges Majestie. Anno 1551. *Cum priuilegio*, as before. 12^{mo}. The fourth edition, "Imprinted at London by Jhon Tisdale dwellyng in Knight rider's streate neare to the Queenes Wardrop," 12^o. without date. This is the latest edition of "The Abridgement," as we know of no work from Tisdale's press earlier than 1550.

Bayle in his Historical and Critical Dictionary says, "The treatise de Inventoribus Rerum contained several things which the Inquisition disliked, wherefore it approved of no edition but that which Gregory XIII. caused to be printed at Rome in 1576, which was purged of all those passages which displeased the Inquisitors. See also the Index Librorum prohibitorum et expurgatorum, p. 850, et seq. 1667, in folio. "Polidori Virgilii de inventoribus rerum Liber, nisi fuerit ex correctis et impressis ab anno 1576."

* Harl. MS. 6966. Excerpta ex Reg. Cath. Wellen.

† See what Burton's MS. says, Nichols's Hist. Leic. ut supr. respecting Guido Duke of Urbino, Polydore Vergil's first patron.

speedily became Bishop of Hereford, and Polydore himself in 1503 was presented to the rectory of Church Langton in Leicestershire.* In the following year, Oct. 20th 1504, when the Cardinal S^ti. Chrysogoni was translated from Hereford to the bishopric of Bath and Wells, we find him enthroned, by commission from the archdeacon of Canterbury, in the person of Polydore as his representative.†

In 1507 Polydore Vergil was collated to the prebend of Scamlesby in the Church of Lincoln ;‡ and early in 1508, at the King's nomination, to the archdeaconry of Wells. In the instrument of appointment he is named “ Mr. Polydor Vergill, otherwise Castellen.”§

It was now, or a little before, that Henry the Seventh

* “ 1503. Nov. 16. Dominus Polydorus Castellen. jurium, reddituum, et proventum Cameræ apostolicae in regno Angliae debitorum Vice Collector generalis, admissus ad Ecclesiam de Langdon Ecclesia in Archidiaconatu Leycestr.” Reg. Smyth Linc. Episc.

† “ 1504. 20 Oct. Hadrianus tit. Sancti Chrysogoni Presb. Cardinal, translatus ab Episcopatu Heref. auctoritate papali inthronizatur (per commissionem ab Archid. Cantuar.) in persona Polidori Virgilii subcollectoris in regno Angl.” Excerpta ex Reg. Cath. Wellen. MS. Harl. 6968, p. 45.

‡ “ 1507. 13 Apr. Dominus Polidorus Castellen. clericus collat. ad Preb. de Scamlesby in Ecclesia Linc. per mortem Magistri Willelmi Elyot.” Reg. Smyth ut supr.

§ The Harleian MS. 6966 contains an abridged copy of the instrument : “ Wheras Adrian Card. de Chrysogoni and bishop of Bath and Wells hath, by his sufficient writing granted unto us the nomination . . . Wherefore

requested him to undertake the History, of which a translation of three of the later Books is here presented to the reader. Polydore states the fact circumstantially in the address to his brother, dated at London in 1517, prefixed to the edition of the Treatise “*de Inventoribus*” which issued from the press of Frobenius at Basle in 1521.

He says, “*Veni post hæc, missu Alexandri sexti Romani pontificis in Britanniam, quæ nunc Angliæ est, ut quæsturam pontificiam apud Anglos gererem.* Ubi ne bonum ocium tererem, rogatu Henrici ejus appellationis Septimi Regis præstantissimi, Res ejus populi gestas seripsi, in historiæque stilum redegi. Quod hercule opus duodecim annos sub literatoria incede laboratum, obstante fato, nondum absolvere licuit.”

Antony à Wood mentions Polydore as at this time in great favour with Fox, Bishop of Winchester,* and from several of Erasmus's letters we learn that he was on terms of familiarity with the persons most eminent for

we woll that ye confer for this time only the Archdeaconry of Welles unto M^r Polydor Vergill otherwise called Castellen. Geven 6 Jan. 23. regni.” The Cardinal de Chrysogoni resided away. Hence Polydore Vergil was as frequently styled Collector as Sub-Collector of the Peter-Pence.

“1507–8. 6 Feb. Polydorus Vergilius alias Castellen, per procur. install. in Archid. Well. et prebend. de Brent annex. installatur personaliter 10 Sept. prox. sequent.” Ibid.

* *Fasti Oxon.* edit. Bliss, 4^o Lond. 1815. coll. 8, 9.

rank and learning who moved within the sphere of the court. Sir Thomas More, Pace, Linacre, Tunstal, and Latimer (the preceptor of Cardinal Pole), are especially enumerated as his friends.*

In the beginning of Oct. 1510 he was naturalised ;† and in 1513, upon being collated to the prebend of Oxgate in St. Paul's Cathedral, he resigned his prebend of Scamblesby.‡ In 1514 he was employed in assisting Wolsey

* Erasmi Epist. fol. 1706. Two Letters, one from Polydore to Erasmus, the other from Erasmus to Polydore, will be found in the Appendix, Numm. III. IV.

He had a short friendship too with Gawin Douglas, bishop of Dunkeld. In the third Book of his History, edit. Bas. 1556, pp. 52, 53, noticing the earliest accounts of the Scottish kings, he says, “Nuper enim Gauinus Douglas Douchedensis episcopus, homo Scotus, virque summa nobilitate et virtute, nescio ob quam causam, in Angliam profectus, ubi audivit dedisse me jampridem ad historiam scribendam, nos convenit : *amicitiam fecimus* : postea summè rogavit, ut ne historiam paulo antè à quodam suo Scoto divulgatam sequerer, in rebus Scoticis explicandis, pollicitusque est se intra paucos dies missurum commentariolum de his neutiquam negligendum, id quod et fecit.” He adds, soon after, “Verum non lieuit diu uti frui amico, qui eo ipso anno, qui fuit salutis humanæ MDXXI, Londini pestilentia absumptus est.”

† Pat. 2 Hen. VIII, p. 1. See the Letters of Naturalization, in Rymer's Fœdera, tom. xiii. pp. 290, 291. They were granted, without fine or fee, Oct. 2, 1510.

‡ “1513. 11 Junii, Polider Vergil Castellen. coll. ad preb. de Oxgate in Ecel. S. Pauli Lond. per mortem magistri Johannis Pratt.” Reg. Fitz-james Ep. Lond.

“1513. 12 Jul. Magister Oliver Cosen collat. ad preb. de Scamblesby

to attain the Cardinal's hat,* though it seems doubtful whether either he or the Cardinal S^ti. Chrysogoni gave all the aid to Wolsey which that minister expected on the death of Julius II. Certain it is that in 1514 both fell out of favour.

The Cottonian Manuscript, Vitellius, B. II. contains various Letters and Papers, some burnt and injured, which it may not be improper to refer to here. The folio 101* of that volume preserves a Letter of the Cardinal S^ti. Chrysogoni, from Rome, to Wolsey, entreating the continuance of favour to himself and Polydore. He refers to long service on his own part : and says, “taceo meam antiquam fidem, et servitutem viginti quatuor annorum.” He resided constantly at Rome, and was one of Wolsey's earliest tools. The same volume, a few leaves on, preserves another Letter, addressed by the whole College of Cardinals to Wolsey, dated Rome, 1st Dec. 1514, recommending the Cardinal S^ti. Chrysogoni, and his “succollector” Polydore, to Wolsey's kindness. At folio 123 we have a long letter from Polydore Vergil himself to the Cardinal S^ti. Chrysogoni dated from London in 1515, giving various intelligence from England ; burnt at the edges and im-

in Eccl. Linc. per resign. Magistri Polydori Vergili." Reg. Smyth Line, Ep.

* MS. Cotton. Brit. Mus. Vitell. B. II. fol. 76, Letter from Polydore Vergil to Wolsey, dated 20 May 1514, but without the name of place.

perfect; possibly an intercepted letter, or it would hardly have been found in the Cottonian Manuscript; in which he says, “de Denariis Sancti Petri pauci sunt qui vellent solvere, dicentibus plurimis se velle videre finem litis; inter quos est etiam *noster bonus Abbas Sancti Albani.*”* It was just at this time that Wolsey received the Abbey of St. Alban’s in commendam, and he is probably the person meant. In folio 126^b we have a fragment of a note to Wolsey, from whom does not appear, but it advises him to caution the King against both the Cardinal and Polydore, and recommends the interception of their letters.†

* Another copy of this Letter occurs in the same volume, fol. 127.

† Polydore Vergil, in his history of the reign of Henry the Seventh, gives the following account of the Cardinal.

“ Legarat Innocentius Rom. pontifex Hadrianum Castellensem, hominem Hetrnseum natum Corneti, quod veteres Castrum novum vocarant, qui in Scotiam proficeretur, ad tollendas ipsius autoritate ex illorum principum animis discordias. Is quamvis magnis sit itineribus profectus, tamen cum pervenit in Angliam, cognovit ab Henrico rege, ad quem etiam a pontifice mandata habebat, se tardius venisse quam res requireret, quare ejus monitu, sibi jam pedem referendum, ac ex Anglia non exceedendum ratus, vix bidui moram fecerat, cum nuntius eadis Jacobi venit. Mansit deinde Hadrianus in Anglia aliquot menses, in quem à primo Joannes Mortonus Cantuariensis archiepiscopus omnia humanitatis officia conferre studuit, hominis doctrina ac moribus ductus, quippe qui cum in summa etiam apud regem gratia posuit. Atqui Henricus cum hominem sibi a Mortono commendatum videret non minimi esse usus, jam tum mirifice diligere cœpit, ejusque opera cum apud Innocentium, tum apud Alexandrum sextum pontifices, ita deinde usus est, ut primun Herefordensem, et ex eo mox relicto, Batho-

The next we read, is of Polydore in prison, succeeded in his sub-collectorship of the Papal dues by Andrew Ammonius, the King's Latin secretary. The original of

nieusem et Wellensem episcopatum ei detulerit. Caeterum Hadriannus brevi post tempore Romam reversus, per omnes honorum gradus in Collegium Cardinalium venit : nam Innocentius eum primò Collectorem, id est, Quæstorem pontificium in Anglia, et Protonotarium unum ex septem creavit, postea Alexander pontifex eundem diu secretorem familiarem habuit, Cardinalemque fecit. Sed quotusquisque est, qui ista, quæ ignavis juxta atque soleribus et dari et auferri possunt, miretur? Alia nempe Hadriani laus est, et haec quidem æterna : erant enim in eo plurimæ literæ non vulgares, sed reconditæ, ac sumnum bonorum delectus judicium, qui memoria nostra primus omnium post illud disertissimum Ciceronis seculum, suis scriptis mortales excitavit, ad perfectas literas de doctissimorum autorum fontibus hauriendas, docuitque modum purè, nitidè, ac luculenter loquendi, sic, ut eo doctore, in præsentia ubique gentium latinitas ab integro renascatur.”
Polyd. Verg. Angl. Hist. lib. xxvi. edit. Bas. 1556, pp. 580, 581.

Some of the circumstances of Castello's subsequent life are incidentally alluded to in a later page of Polydore Vergil's History. He was deprived of the bishopric of Bath and Wells, in 1518, at the time of Cardinal Campeggio's approach to England as legate, and while he remained at Calais : undoubtedly to please, if not at the request of, Leo the Tenth.

“ Venit in Angliam Laurentius Campegius homo Bononiensis inter juriseconsultos jureconsultissimus, vir paratus meditatusque, cui datus fuit collega Volsæus ; is etenim partem Henrici assiduitate petendi rogandique, partim Francisci regis autoritate, à Leone pontifice Romano sub idem tempus legatus Angliae creatus erat. Atqui Campegium ubi Caletum pervenit, sive casu, sive dedita opera Volsæus monuit oportere eo loci dies aliquot morari, ac interim multa promissa faciendo, hominem tentare cœpit, ut vellet per Literas apud Leonem pontificem agere, quò HADRIANUS CARDINALIS BATHONIENSIS priraretur episcopatu in quem jam ipse paratus erat invadere. Fuit autem in promissis Episcopatus Sarisberien-

Ammonius's appointment to this office, from the Cardinal S^t. Chrysogoni under Leo the Tenth's direction, dated at Rome, 26 March 1515, follows at fol. 130.

The incarceration of Polydore caused a lively interest to be taken in his fate at Rome. The same volume from which so many documents have been already cited preserves two Letters, one from the Pope, the other from the Cardinal de Medicis to Henry the Eighth, referring to the fact, and soliciting for Polydore's release, and for the restoration of whatever had been seized at his residence.

sis, quem non multo post vacantem ipse Campegius assecutus est, coque uti frui tandiu licuit, quoad non multò post lege sancitum est, ut absentes in Anglia sacerdotia non possiderent." lib. xxvii. p. 654.

In the next page of Polydore's History we read of the Conspiracy in which Adrian de Castello had previously joined against Leo, and of the vengeance which followed it, of which the deprivation of his English bishopric was no doubt a part.

" Interea Leo non immemor noxiæ, si qua fuerat, Hadrianum et Franciscum [Volaterranum] mulctavit, at non contentus ea præda, ejus satellitum præfectus deinde ad Hadriani aedes quæsitus ivit, si quid intus esset, quod rapi posset. Ejus injuriæ indignitate Hadrianus valde commotus Venetas se contulit, ubi, sicut ejus moris erat, in divinis atque aliis bonis literis, Leone non invito, jam acquiescebat, cùm ece, inimicorum operatione deturbatur de sui episcopatus possessione, quem Volsæus repente voravit."

Castello now fled from Venice, and little more was afterwards heard of him. The editor of Chacon, who is followed by Godwin, says, " quo vero tempore Hadrianus hic noster obierit, incertum; cirea annum 1518 scribit Ciaconius: die 16 Januarii anni 1526 illum jam fato cessisse affirmat Conteliorius: ferunt in Traciam, Constantinopolim usque, necis metu perterritum fugisse, ibique obscurum ac latentem clausisse diem extremum."

How long he remained in prison we know not, but his letter to his brother, dated at London, in 1517, is endited as from a man at liberty and ease, and we are certain that he forfeited none of his preferments but the sub-collectorship. And that was a loss which he was little likely to deplore.* The Pope's letter however states that he had been imprisoned for many months, before Henry the Eighth was written to.†

In 1522, when Charles the Fifth made his visit to England, in the List of lodgings set apart in London for the Emperor's train, we find, “Item, Poloderus in Paules Churche Yarde ; hall, parlour, iiij. chambres, iiiij. beddes, with all necessaries.” Polydore’s place occurs in two other lists ; in one, with the addition of “wyne i. hogg. bere ij. hogg.” Polydore’s place, as it is called, was, no doubt, his residence as prebendary of Osgate.‡

Polydore had long taken the decision to pass the remainder of his life in England, and now devoted himself

* Chalmers, in his Biographical Dictionary, is wrong in representing Polydore Vergil as the last collector of this odious tax in England. He is never subsequently mentioned as returning to the appointment.

Noticing this tribute as established in the Saxon times, Vergil says, “numi illi argentei vocantur vulgo Denarii divi Petri, quos pontificius questor, quem non inscienter Collectorem nuncupant, exigit. *Nos haec olim questuram aliquot per annos gessimus, ejusque muneris obeundi causa primum in Angliam venimus.*” Hist. lib. iv. pp. 89, 90.

† See these two Letters in the Appendix of Documents, Numm. I. II.

‡ Rutland Papers, published by the Camden Society, pp. 91, 94.

more than ever to his studies, and to the completion of his English History: leaving no inquiry unpursued among our older chroniclers.

It is not generally known to his biographers that in 1525 he published the first genuine edition of Gildas, from a manuscript he himself possessed, collated with another which had been furnished to him by Tunstal, Bishop of London.* This and the just remarks he makes in his own history upon that of Geoffrey of Monmouth, fully evidence the discrimination as well as the care with which he compiled.

In 1526 he published a Treatise “*de Prodigis*,” 8vo. Lond. consisting of Dialogues and Attacks upon Divination.† This work was reprinted at Basle by Bebelius in

* “Opus novum. Gildas Britannus Monachus cui Sapientis cognomentum est inditum de Calamitate, Excidio, et conquestu Britanniae, quem Angliam nunc vocant, author vetustus a multis diu desyderatus, et nuper in gratiam D. Cutheberti Tonstalli, Londinen. Episcopi formulis excusus.

“In hoc authore preter multiplicem hic illic Historiarum interpositionem, videre licet gravissimus illius temporis Regum, Principum, Ducum, Epōrum, Sacerdotum, Clericorum, &c. correptiones, vehementi undique spiritus impetu, densis sacrarum literarum testimonis fortiter armatas.” 12°.

The Preface addressed to Tunstall is dated 8 id. April 1525.

This work was reprinted in the “Opus Historiarum, nostro seculo convenientissimum,” 8° Bas. 1541: and again, by Josceline, in 1568, dedicated to Archbishop Parker, with the restoration of some passages which had been intentionally omitted by Polydore.

† The preface, addressed to Francis Maria Duke of Urbino, is dated London, 13 cal. August, 1526.

1531, and again by Isingrim in 1545. To it were prefixed three other Tracts by Polydore, “ De Patientia et ejus fructu, Libri duo ;” “ De Vita perfecta ;” and “ De Veritate et Mendacio.”

In 1528 we find him dedicating the translation of a short piece by St. Chrysostom to his friend Erasmus.*

In 1534 his English History appeared in twenty-six Books ; printed in folio, at Basle : the dedication of it to King Henry the Eighth, dated at London, “ mense Augusto, 1533.” A second edition came out at Basle in 1546. These bring the History down to the year 1509. Immediately upon his death a third edition appeared, in twenty-seven Books, fol. Bas. 1555 ; bringing the History as low as 1538 :† this was followed by another edition, fol.

* Whether this Translation appeared in print earlier than 1550 the editor is not certain. It was then appended to an improved edition of the “ Adagia.” “ Polydori Vergilii Urbinatis Adagiorum æque humanorum ut sacrorum opus, per autorem anno isto M.D.L. rursus novissime jam, ac diligentius recognitum, et magnifice locupletatum. Item Divi Joannis Chrysostomi de perfecto Monacho maloque Princepe Libellus, eodem Polydoro interprete.” 8° Bas. 1550.

Herbert's Ames, i. 342, 388, mentions “ A Book conteyning the Commendations of Matrimony, by William Harrington, LL.D.” as “ Imprinted at the instance of Polydor Virgil, archdeacon of Wells,” 1528, 4^{to}. with a preface by him in Latin. Herbert quotes as his authority “ Mr. Baker's interleaved Maunsell's Catal.”

† “ Polydori Vergilii Urbinatis Anglicæ Historiae Libri viginti septem, ab ipso autore postremum jam recogniti, adque amussim, salva tamen historiæ

Basle, 1556: by a fifth, in 2 volumes in small octavo, Ghent, 1556-7: by a sixth, fol. Basle, 1570: and a seventh, an octavo, edited by Thysius, who forgot the reign of Henry the Eighth, and then prefixed it to the whole with an apology, 8°, Leyden, 1651.

Burnet acquaints us that, as a member of the Convocation of the Clergy, Polydore Vergil signed the Articles of 1536;* and in that of 1547 the declaration for the Communion in both kinds.†

veritate, expoliti." The following appears as a preface at the back of the title-page to this and the succeeding folio editions.

"ELOGIUM ANGLICÆ HISTORIE.

" Paucis ante annis, Polydorus Vergilius Vrbinas edidit historiam suam Anglicam, in qua primum arte conficienda, deinde ordine digerenda, dein de oratione vestienda, quanquam et omnium fermè opinionem expectationeunque et atque adeò scipsum superavit; attamen cùm ille in suis de rerum Inventoribus libris demonstraverit, nullam olim artem quæ futura esset excellentior, intra suum stetisse initium, quòd nihil propè sit simul et inventum et perfectum, ex eo voluit eam ipsam historiam regustare, polire, locupletare, id quod biennio pòst, hoc est, anno MD.XXXVI. primum, deinde etiam LIII. naviter fecit, salva tamen ac incolumi illa prisca integritate majestateque veritatis historiæ. Quare optime Lector accipies hoc opus perfectum, quo abhinc sexcentos, ut vetus ille dinumerandi modus usitatus doctis usurpetur, annos, non aliud in eo scribendi genere, haud forsitan temerè dices, latinius elegantiusque compositum fuisse: atque istuc est tibi testatum, quòd posses meritò gaudere seculum nostrum tandem aliquando elocutione latina passim purè emendata plenè florere. Quapropter in hac equidem parte vel ipsa Anglia non minus felix censenda est, quòd tales rerum suarum gestarum scriptorem primum habuerit."

* Burnet's Hist. of the Reformation, fol. edit. i. 436.

† Ibid. ii. 102, iii. 360.

In the interim between these two years affairs of business called him to Italy. How long exactly he remained there we are not told, but it was for some time. The fact of his departure is stated by himself in the proœmium to his twenty-seventh Book. Up to that time he had been in the constant habit of marking events as they occurred. When he returned, his health failed ; and, perhaps, in that perilous day for churchmen, his courage. He says “secutus est Henricus eo nomine octavus, numero verò Regum vigesimus septimus, cuius res gestas usque ad trigesimum regni ipsius annum perscripsi, qui post hac octo regnavit annos, cùm ipse id temporis in Italiam revocatus fui negotiorum causa, ubi perdiu mansi : at simul ac inde reverti in Angliam, interrupta jam serie rerum publicarum, quas in dies singulos annotare prius solebam, non statim post idem mihi institutum tenere per valetudinem incommodam licuit.”

In 1550 the infirmities of age requiring a warmer climate than that he had so long been pleased with, he sought and obtained a licence from King Edward the Sixth to return to his native country : to remain there for life at his pleasure : and, at the same time, to retain the rents and profits of the archdeaconry of Wells, and of his prebend of Nonnington, in the Church of Hereford, “without incurring danger, penalty, or forfeiture.”* The

* See the Append. Num. V. Newcourt says he sold the perpetuity of

letters patent state expressly that the indulgence thus afforded to him was in consideration of his literary merits. He likewise retained till his death his prebend of Oxgate in the Cathedral of St. Paul.*

Polydore did not take immediate advantage of his licence, for in 1551 we find him still in London, receiving the further bounty of the Crown. In the Council-Book of that year, Nov. 1st, there is the entry of a warrant to the treasurer and chamberlains of the Exchequer to deliver to “Polydor Vergill in way of the Kinges Majesties reward the sum of one hundred marks :” and on the 9th of November following another warrant to the Exchequer to pay to “Polydore Vergil in way of the Kings reward the sum of three hundred crowns, after five shillings the

the house at Wells at this time, which belonged to his archdeaconry. Burton assures us he was a benefactor there “in beautifying the choir of the Cathedral Church of Wells with fair arras hangings (which are there at this day, 1636); wherein, in many escocoheons, are his Arms; viz. Argent, a laurel tree vert, supported with two crocodiles proper; over which, in a winding label, a scroll is written,

‘ Hæc Polydori sunt munera Vergilii ;’
underneath, in a strait scroll,

‘ Sum Laurus virtutis honos pergrata triumphis.’ ”

Nichols’s Hist. Leic. vol. iii. pt. i. p. 538.

* “ 1555, 13 Decemb. Magister Johannes Braban clericus collat. ad preb. de Oxgate in Eccles. S. Pauli *per mortem Polydori Vergilii.*” Reg. Edm. Boner. Epise. Lond.

crown."* No intervening entry occurs to show that the one superseded the other; they stand as separate gifts. The following short letter to Sir William Cecil, the original of which is preserved in the Lansdowne MS. N°. II. art. 66, relates to the later gift.

" Optime Cecilli. S. Initium jungendæ amicitiæ tecum occasio hæc facit. Heri enim adivi ad illustrem Northumbriæ Dueem, mei negotii causa, qui statim petiit an accepissem schedulam a consilio regio subscriptam de dono Majestatis Regie dato. Respondi intellexisse me a domino Privati sigilli custode eam esse signatam. Tum ille inquit, Mane domi, ipse namque ad te illam mox mittendam curabo, si non potueris commodo tuo ante habere. At ego ne immodestus viderer, hodie bene mane me ad Regiam contuli, quia etsi heri te convenire studii uspiam, tamen non potui, sed accidit, ut tu paulo ante de cubiculo tuo exiveris. Quare nunc mitto ad te famulum meum Polydorum Rosse, cum his literis meis, cui rogo, velis eam ipsam schedulam ad me dare, quo possim tempore suo rem meam peragere. Siquid vero tibi tuisve ministris inde debeatur illud libenter persolvam. Vale, et me ama. Ex ædibus nostris x. Novemb. 1551.

Tuus POLYDORUS VER-
GILIUS, manu mea."

Addressed,

" Domino Cecilio, Seeretario Regio."

These presents, in all probability, were to provide for the expenses of his journey; and in those days must have been more than sufficient. He retired to Urbino; and there, to the close of life, continued to devote himself to learned pursuits.

* Harl. MS. 6195, p. 16.

He is stated to have collated the first impression of Nicolo Perotti's "Cornueopiæ" with a copy in the Duke of Urbino's library, and to have corrected its errata.

Honiger obtained his Notes on Horace, and included them with those of other commentators in his edition of that author, printed in folio, at Basle, in 1580.

A manuscript List of English Bishops, by him, is also referred to,* but whether it still exists, or at what period it was compiled, is unknown to the editor of the present volume: though he suspects it is not impossible that it may be only the original of the List of Bishops of the several Sees from early time, printed at the end of the Index to the later editions of Polydore Vergil's History.

His last composition that we are acquainted with, is a Latin letter of congratulation to Queen Mary the First, upon her accession to the English Throne, dated August 5th, 1553: without the mention of place, but, doubtless, from Urbino.† The original is preserved among the Harleian Manuscripts in the British Museum.‡

Peter a Sancto Romualdo, in the Continuation of Ade-
mar's Chronicle, p. 326, asserts that Polydore Vergil died

* "MS. among the English Ecclesiasticks, commended by Stapleton," Princ. Doctr. lib. xiii. c. 7. Wharton, Angl. Sacr. vol. i. p. xiv.

† See it in the Append. Num. VI.

‡ MS. Harl. 6989, fol. 149. The same Volume contains an earlier letter of Vergil "Edovardo Lælio, Regis Angliæ apud Cæsarem Oratori." Lond. 19 Oct. 1526.

in 1562 ; but his biographers generally place his death in 1555 ; and they are confirmed in the correctness of this latter date by the Registers of the Sees of Bath and Wells, of Hereford, and of London, in all of which it appears that those who stepped into the archdeacon's preferments succeeded in that year "*per mortem* Polydori Vergilii."

FEW writers of the English Story have met with such harsh treatment as Polydore Vergil. Sir Thomas Pope Blount in his "Censura Auctorum," and Bayle in the Notes to his "Historical and Critical Dictionary," have taken pains to enumerate the charges brought against him for deficiency in judgment, for partiality, and for gross falsehood.

The truth is that Polydore Vergil's attainments went far beyond the common learning of his age. The earlier part of his History interfered with the prejudices of the English. He discarded Brute as an unreal personage ;* and considered Geoffrey of Monmouth's History an heterogeneous mixture of fact and fable, furnishing comparatively little which could be safely relied upon as history.†

* "Caeterum Livius, Dionysius Halicarnaseus, ac plerique alii qui diligenter de antiquitatibus Romanorum scripsérunt, nunquam hujus Bruti meminere. Neque illud ex Britannorum annalibus prodi potuerat." Polyd. Verg. ut supr. lib. i. p. 17.

† "At contra quidam nostris temporibus, pro expiandis istis Britonum

Hence Leland's defence of Geoffrey, printed in the "Collectanea," where it fills no fewer than nine octavo pages, "Codrus, sive Laus et Defensio Gallofridi Arturii Monumetensis contra Polydorum Vergilium :" followed by his "Assertio inclytissimi Arturii, Regis Britanniæ," first printed in 1544.*

Sir Henry Savile, in the dedication of the "Scriptores post Bedam" to Queen Elizabeth, was the next who assailed Vergil. He was little to be attended to, because a foreigner ; "homo Italus, et in rebus nostris hospes."†

maculis, scriptor emersit, ridicula de eisdem figmenta contexens, eosque longè supra virtutem Macedonum, et Romanorum, impudenti vanitate attollens : Gaufredus hic est dictus, cognomine Arthurus, pro eo, quòd multa de Arthurō ex priscis Britonum fragmentis sumpta, et ab se aucta, per superductum latini sermonis colorem, honesto historiae nomine obtexit. Quinetiam majore ausu, eujusdam Merlini divinationes falsissimas, quibus utique de suo plurimum addidit, dum eas in latinum transferret, tanquam approbatas et immobili veritate submixas prophetias vulgavit." Ibid.

* Lelandi Collectanea, edit. 1774, vol. v. p. 2.

† "Nam Polydorus, ut homo Italus, et in rebus nostris hospes, et (quod caput est) neque in republica versatus, nec magni alioqui vel judicii vel ingenii, pauca ex multis delibans, et falsa plerumque pro veris amplexus, historiam nobis reliquit cum cætera mendas tum exiliter sane et jejune conscriptum." Rerum Anglie. Script. post Bedan. fol. Lond. 1596.

Nicolson gives a comment on this passage, which shews that he had not looked into Polydore's History to form an opinion for himself. "Some," he says, "have fancied that the severer character which Sir Henry is here pleased to give of this author, might chiefly be applied to the History of Henry VIII. and that a great many passages in that reign may be darkly or falsely represented by him, by reason of his being unacquainted with the

Paulus Jovius charged him with administering flattery to the English; he says the French and Scotch writers had made the same complaint; and adds that he had introduced into his History the names of inconsiderable captains.*

Humphrey Lhuyd, without adducing the slightest evidence, stigmatised him as a malicious detractor.†

English tongue; which could not but very much obstruct his knowledge in modern transactions. Other things, say they, have fallen from him under a borrowed light and colour, out of the respect he had for Queen Mary, and his great inclinations to serve the interests of that princess.” The slightest investigation of Polydore’s History of Henry the Eighth’s reign, however, will evince the futility of these remarks.

* “Conscriptis Historias rerum Britannicarum, ea fide ut Scottis et Gallis saepe reclamantibus, alieno potius arbitrio quam suo intexusse multa in gratiam gentis existimetur, quod in recensendis minorum Ducum nominibus—tanquam gloriae avidis plurimum indulserit.” Pauli Jov. Elog. cap. cxxxv. p. 279.

† “Cum ante paukos annos in Polydori Virgilii Itali, et Hectoris Boethii Scoti historias Britannicas incidissem quorum ille nominis Britannici gloriam non solum obfuscare, sed etiam Britannos ipsos mendacissimis suis calumniis infamare totis viribus conatur: hic vero dum Scotos suos è tenebris eruit, quidquid unquam aut Romani aut Britanni lande dignum in hac insula gessare, hoc totum illis attribuit insulissimus scriptor.” Lhuyd Deser. Angliae, fol. 6. Other passages, equally calumnious as relating to Polydore, are quoted from Lhuyd by bishop Nicolson, Hist. Lib. edit. 1776, p. 57. Such as “Homo ignotus et exterus.”—“Vir perfictæ frontis”—“Invidia et odio tumens”—“Infamis homunculus”—“Os impudens”—“Delirans Urbinas.”—Nor ought anything of this, he adds, to be attributed to an over-boiling of honest Humphrey’s Welsh blood, *if the other matters*

Owen reviled him in an epigram,

“ Virgilii duo sunt : alter Maro : Tu Polydore
Alter, Tu mendax, ille Poeta fuit.”

Caius, in his Treatise “ de Antiquitate Cantabrigiæ,” makes a heavier charge. He mentions it not only as a thing reported, but found to be certainly true, that Polydore Vergil committed *as many of our ancient and manuscript historians to the flames AS WOULD HAVE FILLED A WAGGON*, that the faults of his own work might pass undiscovered.*

La Popliniere, in his “ Histoire des Histoires,” improves even upon this ; he says, Polydore caused all the histories to be burnt, which *by the King's authority* and the assistance of his friends he could possibly come at.†

Against these charges Polydore Vergil was ably defended, more than two hundred years ago, by Burton, already mentioned, in a manuscript written in 1636, which

he is accused of be true. Nicolson evidently, himself, doubted the truth of the charges.

* “ Fama percerebuit, atque etiam cognitum et compertum certo est, tot historias nostras, vetustas et manuscriptas immani scelere igni commendasse, quot ne plaistrum quidem posset capere et sustinere, arbitratus, ut credo, se ejus generis omnes solum habuisse : aut veritus sibi vitio dari, quod secutus legem jampridem librorum veterum castigatoribus datam (ut ipse de se ait in præfatione in Gildam) nonnulla resecuerit, quæ scriptores prodiderunt.” De Antiq. Cantabr. 4to. Lond. 1574, p. 52.

† La Popliniere, Hist. des Histoires, liv. ix. p. 485.

has been since printed by the late Mr. Nichols in his History of Leicestershire. His words are these:

“ Upon the first coming of Polydore, King Henry VII. imposed on him the penning of the English history from the first beginning to that present time ; wherein, as himself saith, he spent twelve years’ labour together, but yet finished it not. After some discontinuance, he set upon it again, and performed it in 1533 in the 25th year of King Henry VIII. to whom he then made dedication of the same ; a work of great labour and like reading, but much carped at by John Druse* (who wrote a book against him), Jo. Leland, Richard White, Jo. Lewis, Humphrey Lluid, and others ; not, as I conceive, for any just cause, but for that he, being an alien, should be graced with such a matter of charge, which most properly had belonged to a native of the land. The chief matters they charge him with are, first for that having taken the substance of the beginning of his History all out of the works of Geoffrey of Monmouth, yet unthankfully (imitating therein William of Newborough) lashing at him ; next, for that in many places he pitcheth somewhat smartly upon the antiquity of Britain ; thirdly, for that he doth seem severely to censure some of those Kings which he treateth of ; lastly, that, having gotten many old manuscripts together, by whose help he compiled his book, after his conclusion of the same, he set fire on them all.

“ For the first and second, it is well observed by many of great reading and judgment, that Geoffrey of Monmouth hath somewhat hyperbolically extolled the praise and antiquity of the Britons, and interlaced many passages of his own device, and drawn down a series of descents, but with what truth the just and true chronology of time, upon good examination, will soon discover ; so that Polydore doth not upon the matter impeach the antiquity of Britain, but the fabulous inventions of the said Geoffrey. To the third,

* This is a mistake for Price. The title of the work is “ *Historiæ Brytannicae Defensio, Joanne Priseo Equestris Ordinis Brytanno Authore.* ” 4to. Lond. 1573.

those Princes which opposed the Pope's proceedings are indeed by him censured, those that gave way are applauded ; but that is to be attributed to the time, and to the circumstance, as whose agent he was, yet whoever shall peruse what he hath written shall find that many things he did not approve, though instituted by the Pope's authority, but held them impertinent and novel, as the inhibiting of marriage to spiritual men, the ordination of festival days, examinations, kneeling to pictures, creation of Cardinals and religious orders, and such-like.* Lastly, for his destroying of manuscripts, I could never yet be drawn to believe it, neither is it probable, for that, unless he had had all the copies of each kind together, that by one act they might all have finally perished, he would never have attempted such an enterprize ; and certain it is, by Leland's Collectanea, that almost in every Abbey (himself setting down a catalogue of all manuscripts which he saw in each place) there was variety and store of copies, not only of the chiefest writers, but almost of the meanest chronologers and historians. But, whatsoever they have said, this I may truly say, and can make good, He was a man of singular invention, good judgement, and good reading, and a true lover of antiquities.”†

Gale in the preface to his “ Scriptores,” and Bishop Nicolson in his English Historical Library, have joined in later times to give currency to another charge, that of shipping manuscripts for Rome. Gale says the vessel loaded with them went from Rochester Bridge.‡ He is

* Bale, De Script. Britann. Centur. xiii. says the same : “ licet in plenisque scriptis suis veræ Religioni superstitionem prætulerit, piè nihilominus Christianorum ministrorum conjugia defendebat, pièque statuarum cultum damnabat, cum quibusdam aliis Romanensium Rabbinorum imposturis.”

† Nichols's Hist. of Leicestersh. vol. iii. pt. i. p. 538.

‡ Gale, Script. xv. fol. Oxon. 1691. Præf. ad lect. “ Certe si famæ receptæ et inveteratae credere liceat, unus Polydorus Virgilius quæstor tunc

“said to have borrowed books out of the public library at Oxford, without taking any care to restore them: upon which the University, as they had good reason, declined lending any more, till forced to it by a mandate, which he made a shift to procure from the King. In other places he likewise pillaged the libraries at his pleasure, and at last sent over a whole ship-load of manuscripts to Rome.”*

But neither the proof nor the probability of this have been established: and it is not a little singular that so many of our good antiquaries and historians should, like sheep, have leaped after each other in gross error.

Taylor, too, in his History of Gavelkind, 4^{to} Lond. 1663, pp. 83, 84, says, Polydore “laboured to disparage the BRITISH ANTIQUITIES, and not only so, but under the patronage of King Henry, having power to search all Records, is reported to have seised the most antient thereof (that were in being) in the Treasury of LANDAF, and to have destroyed them; something of which nature I have also seen; for in a Register book, compiled by St. Thomas de Cantilupe (bishop of Hereford) I found three leaves cut out; which, by a constant and confident tradition of the Registers of the Diocess of Hereford, in whose custody that Book was, it is averr'd that this was done by Polydore.”

apud nos Pontificius, navem istis spoliis onustam a ponte Rhoffensi Romam misit.”

* Nicolson, Engl. Hist. Lib. edit. 1776, p. 58.

This again is Welsh ; even Herefordshire, up to the time of Henry the Eighth, was frequently if not usually considered as a Welsh county.

Had there been any truth, or evidence in support of the Oxford story, Antony à Wood would have been sure to have ferretted out the facts : all *he* says in his History of Duke Humphrey's Library is, “That several scholars would, upon small pledges given in, borrow books thence : which pledges, being not half worth the books that were borrowed, were never restored. Polydore Vergil, as tradition tells us, borrowed many after such a way ; but at length being denied, did, upon petition made to the King, obtain his licence for the taking out of any manuscript for his use (in order, I suppose, for the collecting materials for his English History or Chronicle of England), which, being imitated by others, the library thereby suffered very great loss.”*

Even Burnet has a fling at Polydore, but it is for his character of Wolsey only. He says, “Neither Erasmus nor Polydore Vergil made their court dexterously with the Cardinal, which did much intercept the King's favour to them ; so that the one left England, and the other was but coarsely used in it, who has sufficiently revenged him-

* Wood's Hist. and Antiq. of Oxford, edit. by Gutch, 4° Oxf. 1796, vol. ii. p. ii. pp. 918, 919.

self upon the Cardinal's memory.”* Yet who is there that has studied the history and correspondence of Wolsey's time but sees the corroboration, in every part, of the portrait which Polydore Vergil has drawn?

Wharton, in the *Anglia Saera*, has given a character of Polydore very different from Savile, Gale, and Nicolson. He calls him “*Vir undequaque doctissimus, et Anglicanæ Historiæ peritissimus.*”

THE compilation of Polydore Vergil's History occupied the labour of twenty-eight years before it was presented to King Henry the Eighth. It was the first of our histories in which the writer ventured to compare the facts and weigh the statements of his predecessors; and it was the first in which summaries of personal character are introduced in the terse and energetic form adopted in the Roman classics. In choice of expression, and in the purity of Latin style, Polydore Vergil exceeded all his contemporaries:† and the numerous editions of his work

* Hist. Reform. Oxford edit. vol. i. pp. 20, 21.

† His Address to the Reader at the end of his History apologizes for the necessity of using a few terms unknown to classical latinity.

“ POLYDORUS VERGILIUS LECTORI S.

“ MONITUM te, optime Lector, volo permulta verba minus Latina, longo usu, non item ratione, jampridem in consuetudinem quotidiani sermonis venisse, sic, ut velimus nolimus, ea interdum usurpare cogamur: cuiusmodi

in the sixteenth century sufficiently shew the estimation

sunt Dux et Comes, olim officii tantum, at summæ nunc dignitatis vocabula. Item comitatus, pro regione ; cancellarius, pro scribarum ; abbas, prior, pro monachorum præfector. Ista paucula (nam cætera facilè declinavimus) cum legendō in ea incideris, non mihi vitio des, sed atque adeò nostris temporibus, quæ ita quondam barbara facta sunt, ut nondum ejusmodi nævis purgari ad unguem potuerint. Vale."

If the reader can endure another specimen of Polydore's Latin, let him peruse the following short notice of the last moments of Queen Catherine of Arragon, and his translation of her letter to the King :

" At Catherina sexto post die graviori morbo affecta, cum animo præsentiret mortem adventare, ancillam non indoctam jussit binas scribere literas eodem exemplo, unas ad regem, alteras ad Eustachium, quas ipsa dictavit, in hæc verba :

' Domine mi rex marite semper charissime, Salve. Jam advenit hora mortis meæ, in quo temporis puncto, amor facit ut te paucis admoneam de salute animæ tuæ, quam debes cunctis mortalibus rebus anteponere, neglecta præ ea omni corporis cura, propter quam et me in multas miserias, et te ipsum in solicitudines plures congeciisti : sed hoc tibi ignosco, ac Deus tibi ignoscat, tam velim, quam precibus piis oro. Quod superest, commendō tibi filiam communem nostram, in quam quæso, officium illud paterne totum conferas, quod ego a te alias desideravi. Preterea precor summè, uti ancillas meas respicias, easque suo tempore bene locare nuptiis placeat, quod multum non est, cùm non sint nisi tres, et dare meis ministris stipendum debitum, atque in unum etiam annum ex tua gratia, benignitate, liberalitate futurum, ne deserti vel inopes esse videantur. Postremo unum illud testor. Oculi mei te solum desiderant. Vale.'

It is true that we know of no English composition now remaining in Polydore's hand-writing ; but, after the reading of this beautiful translation, who will be so bold to assert, or who will believe the assertion, that Polydore Vergil was ignorant of the English tongue ? The length of his residence in this country alone repudiates the supposition : and his History shews it was impossible that he could be ignorant of it.

in which his contemporaries held him.* Locked away in a language unknown to the common reader, his History has suffered disparagement in later times. Even Lingard, the best of our modern English Historians, scarcely quotes him.

Thus far, as regards the Latin History. In the Catalogue of the Library of Henry the Eighth, in the 34th year of his reign, transcribed from a book in the Augmentation Office by the late Mr. Thomas Astle, and by him presented to the British Museum, † “CRONICA POLYDORI” occurs. It was, no doubt, the presentation copy to that monarch : but this Manuscript is not forthcoming now. It had ceased to be found in the Royal Library when Casley formed his catalogue.

The Manuscript Translation from which the Three Reigns here prepared for the Camden Society have been selected, has the signature of LUMLEY on the first page,— and could not, therefore, have formed any part of the Royal Library previous to the time of James the First, when Lord Lumley’s Books and Manuscripts, which had been purchased for Henry Prince of Wales, merged into the Royal Collection. ‡

* Even Lhuyd acknowledges the popularity of Polydore’s History, “Sed cum in memoriam revocareum, Polydorum Virgilium, cuius opera in omnium manibus sunt.”—p. 69.

† Addit. MS. Brit. Mus. 4729.

‡ Dr Birch, in his Life of Henry Prince of Wales, pp. 161—163, says,

The volume itself, MS. REG. C. VIII. IX. (once in two books), at present forms a folio of some size, in a hand of the latter part of the reign of Henry the Eighth. To the end of the reign of Henry the Sixth the writing is uniform and beautiful; the work of a scribe. The two last reigns are in a coarser hand, with numerous interlineations, marginal additions, and changes of expression, like an author's copy, prepared for fair transcription. The Translator, it may be conjectured, might not have lived to the entire completion of his task, as the Volume comes down no lower than the death of Richard the Third, leaving the reigns

“The death of John Lord Lumley on the 11th of April 1609, without leaving any issue, gave the King an opportunity of gratifying the Prince's love of books, and making a noble addition to the Royal Library.

“King James I. enriched the Bodleian Library at Oxford at the expense of his own, giving a warrant to Sir Thomas Bodley, under the Privy Seal, for the choice of any books, which that gentleman should like in any of his houses or libraries. But His Majesty very amply supplied the place of them by the purchase of Lord Lumley's library, which contained not only his own collection, but that of his father-in-law, Henry Fitz-Alan Earl of Arundel, who had lived in the reign of King Henry VIII. when, upon the dissolution of the Monasteries, he had great opportunities of collecting manuscripts, many of which, as well as of the printed books in the Royal Library, have the name of Arundel and Lumley written in them.

“King James, having purchased Lord Lumley's library, ordered it, at the suggestion of Mr. Newton, to be reposed, together with that of his predecessors, in the palace of St. James', where the Prince resided, for the use of his Highness; and Mr. Patrick Young, son of Sir Peter Young, his Majesty's tutor, was appointed keeper of it.”

of King Henry the Seventh and King Henry the Eighth untouched.

The Translation is free, and of a thorough English character, evidently made by a person powerfully acquainted with the language into which he rendered his author, and well versed in the colloquial phrases of the period. Who he was we have yet to learn; but this must be said, that in elegance of expression he rivals his author. As a specimen of language alone the whole Work is worthy of publication.

Polydore's History during the reigns which form the present volume is indispensable to fill a chasm of near seventy years in the dark period to which they bear relation; and it is important to know that he wrote this portion of his work whilst many of the persons alluded to in the events of the reigns of Edward the Fourth and Richard the Third were alive, and who communicated with him.*

* See pp. 185, 209.

APPENDIX.

NUM. I.

*Pope Leo X. to King Henry VIII. in favour of Polydore Vergil
whom the king had imprisoned.*

[MS. Cotton. Vitell. B. 11. fol. 164. *Orig.*]

LEO · PP^a · X^s.

Charissime in Christo fili noster: salutem et apostolicam benedictionem. Commendavimus alijs nostris literis Majestati tuæ dilectum filium Polidorum Verginium, hujus sanctæ Apostolicae Sedis in regno isto subcollectorem; qui quidem in carcerem tuo jussu conjectus est, plurésque jam in eo menses detinetur: hortatique sumus te, pro tua in candem sedem atque nos reverentia, proque nostrâ in te paternâ dilectione et charitate, velles eum liberum facere. Cujus quidem rei, cum nihil dum actum abs Te intelligamus, has ad tuam Majestatem literas dandas duximus; quibus etiam atque etiam id ipsum abs te attentè atque enixè requirimus, tūm etiam ut Collectorî domum quæque ablata ex ea sunt mandes restitui, neque patiaris ut ad te frustra totiens de eadem re scripsisse videamur. In eo præterea Majestas tua nobis gratissimum faciet, si dilectum filium nostrum Hadrianum Cardinalem Batoniensem, tuae Majestati deditissimum, resque ejus omnes fovebis, tibique ipsas nostro nomine commendatas facies.

Datum Romæ apud Sanctum Petrum, sub annulo piscatoris, die trigesimo Augusti, M.D. xv., Pontificatus nostri anno tertio.

P. BEMBUS.

Carissimo in Christo filio nostro Henrico
Angliæ Regi Illustri.

NUM. II.

The Cardinal Julio de Medicis to King Henry VIII. in favour of Polydore Vergil.

[MS. Cotton. Vitell. B. 11. fol. 165. *Orig.*]

Serenissime ac invictissime Rex et Domine Domine mihi colendissime, humillimas commendationes. Nisi scirem quâ promptitudine reverendissimus Dominus mens Cardinalis Hadrianus in causa Collectoriae se gesserit, ut Majestatis vestræ voluntati satisfaceret, quâve fide et servitute in eam semper fuerit, minus audacter fortasse scribere quâm nunc facio pro Polydoro ejus servitore, quem non sine molestia in carcere conjectum intellexi. Nam quum reverendissimus Dominus Cardinalis omnia fecerit quæ ex eo petebantur, et Dominus Andreas possessionem Collectoriae acceperit, et omnia acta transacta jam sint, proindè Majestatem vestram plurimum rogo nô permittat talem Cardinalem et Servitorem suum tantam pati indignitatem, ejusdemque Servitorem sic diutius detineri, quem quantum magis ex animo possum commendo vestræ regiæ Majestati, et supplico ut dignetur mandare quod liberetur. In quo faciet Sanctissimo Domino nostro rem valde gratam: mihi gratiam singularem: et ipsum Donium reverendissimum non mediocriter consolabatur. Et felicissimè valeat vestra regia Majestas, cui me humillime commendabo.

Bononiae, iij. Septembri M.D. xv.

Excellentissimæ vestræ regiæ Majestatis,
humillimus ac fidelissimus servitor
JU. CARDINALIS DE MEDICIS.

Serenissimo ac invictissimo principi et
Domino, Domino mihi colendissimo,
Domino Henrico Angliae, &c. Regi.

NUM. III.

Polydore Vergil to Erasmus, 3 June, 1523.

[Erasmi Epist. fol. Lugd. Bat. 1706. Append. Epist. ccxxxvi.]

Reverendo Domino Erasmo, amico charissimo, Polydorus Virgilius,
S. D. P.

Mi Erasme, salve. Nudiustertius noster Zacharias salutem mihi tuis
verbis nuntiavit, significavitque te meorum libellorum famae profuisse, ac de
me postremo quæsivit, an illud scissem. Ego ad ea respondi, me certum
habere studium erga me tuum, et id esse, ut perinde tu mei, ut ipse tui et
amantissimus et studiosissimus sum. Postea heri ille duxit ad me puerum
tuum, à quo particulatim intellexi, quonam pacto tecum ageretur, id quod
summae mihi fuit voluptati: nam quod vivis, quod vales, illud maxime ex
republica nostra litteraria est, cum perspicuum sit, naturam te omnium
unum ad eam locupletandam peperisse. Quòd tua in me officia continenter
confers, ago gratias, ita respondeas amori, ita jus necessitudinis, quæ jam-
pridem mihi tecum intercessit, naviter servas. Ego itidem facio, qui tuae
maximæ laudis haudquaque detrectator exsisto, id quod testatur Epistola
nostra ad nostrum Cuthbertum Londinensem Episcopum, cui nuper duas
sacerorum adagiorum centurias dedicavi. Scripsi item, postquam hinc
proxime discessisti, ad te litteras, easque nostro Moro dedi, sed quia nihil
responsum est, postea mihi eatenus tacendum putavi, quoad usu veniret, ut
uspiciam una essemus, quod tandem aliquando fiet. Interim si tibi usui esse
possum, utere Polydoro tuo, qui te etiam pecunia juvare cupit, cuius rei
cum post hac periculum feceris, spes non falle, uti de puerò tuo scire
poteris. Vale. Londino, 3 Junij, anno 1523.

Saluta, quæso, meis verbis Joh. Oecolampodium, si istie agat, et nostrum
Beatum Rhenanum.

NUM. IV.

Erasmus to Polydore Vergil, 24 March 1527.

[*Ibid. Epist. cccliv.*]

Erasmus Roterod. Polydoro Vergilio S. D.

Quo non penetrant linguae fascinatrices? Quas nos, mi Polydore, non
alia ratione inclius uileisci possumus, quam ut amicitiam, quam isti reseissam
vellent, vinculis quam aretissimis adstringamus. Videbis Homilias tibi
dicatas, nunc rursus excusas cum dignitate, quo magis etiam urantur, quos
erueiat nostra concordia. Quod sedulo agis *εἰρηνοποιόν* inter Leum et me,
pro isthæ animo Christus tibi referet promissam beatitudinem. At præ-
serbit ille parum æquas pacis conditiones. Ostendat ille quæ perperam
scripserim in ipsum, ego vicemiss ostendam quæ ille perperam scripsit in me.
Tum post mutuam palinodiā eocat amicitia. Verum, hoc esset non sarare
gratiam, sed renovare simultatem. Optimum fuerit μὴ μηδουματῆσαι, sed
illa Græcorum ἀμηνηστίᾳ prouersus omnium veterum injuriarum abolere memo-
riam, ac scripto quopiam amico testari positam esse simultatem, et animos
Christiana junetos concordia, quod factum est inter Jacobum Fabrum ac
me. Quod mihi cum tot portentis dimicandum est, agnoso feroque fatum
meum. Cum summis mihi pulchre convenit. Clemens Septimus bis jam
misit ducentos florēnos, nihil non pollicens. Cæsar nuper ad me scripsit
amantissime cum suo cancellario. Regum, Cardinalium, Ducum, Episco-
porum literis honorificentissime scriptis habeo plena serinia. A multis
veniunt et munera nequaquam vulgaria. A tenebribus velut à cimicibus
ac pediculis mordeor: nam his nec Cæsar nec Pontifex potest imponere
silentium. Tuti sunt suis tenebris. Sed nihil aliud efficiunt nisi quod
tradueunt seipso. Nos rectum clavum tenebimus usque ad extremum vitae
terminum: de eventu viderit Christus, hujus fabulæ choragus. De libello
excedendo egi cum Frobenio, respondet se paratissimum, ea lege qua exudit
Adagia. Bene vale, patrone magne. Basilea, 24 Martij, anno 1527.

NUM. V.

The Warrant for Polydore Vergil to depart the Realm, A.D. 1550.

[Pat. 4 Edw. VI. p. 5, m. 14. Rym. Fœd. tom. xv. p. 234.]

Edwarde the Sixte, &c. to all and singuler to whom, &c. greeting. Whereas our trustie and welbelovid Polidorus Virgilius hathe made humble sute unto us that, he being bourne in the partes of Italie, and having servid our grandfather King Henry the Seventh, our father King Henry th' Eight, of most noble memorie, and us, by the space of forti yeares and above, in writing and putting fourth in print divers notable Workes and Stories, may be licenceid to departe oute of this our realme to visit and see, nowe in his old age, his said natyve countrey, and there to make his abode during his pleasuer, and also quietly, without interruption, to have, hold, and enjoy the profits, rents, and commodities of th' archdeaconrie of Welles in the Cathedral Churche of Welles, and the Prebend of Nonnyngton, in the Cathedrall Churche of Hereford, which the said Polidorus now enjoyith and holdith within this our Realme.

We let you wit that, by the advyse of the lords and others of our Privy Counsail, in consideration of the long, painful, and acceptable service heretofore done by the said Polidorus, of our grace especial and mere motion, we have lyicensed, and by these our letters patents doo license the said Polidorus Virgilius, not only to pass out of this our realme, and to inhabite and dwell from hensforth in the said partes of beyond the seas, during his lief, at his pleasuer, but also that, by vertue and auctoritie of theis our said letters patents, the said Polidorus Virgilius, at all tymes from hensforth during his said lief, may be absent and nonresident from his said archdeaconrie of Wells and the said prebend of Nonington, without incurring any daunger, penaltie, or forfaiture for the same, and shall and may, by hymself, or by his sufficient proctour or assign, receyve, take, levy, and enjoye, all and singuler the rents, profitts, commodities, and revenues perteyning or belongyng to the said archedeaconrie and prebend, and to either of them, during his said naturall lief, and the same to convert to his oun use, profit, and commoditie, any use, custom, ordinance, or prescription of

the said church or churches whereunto his said archedeaconrie and prebend doo apperteyn, had or made to the contrarie, or any act, statute, ordinance, provision, or proclamation heretofore had or made, or hereafter to be made, within this our realme to the contrarie hereof in any wise notwithstanding.

Wherfore we woll and commaund all and singuler our officers, ministers, and subjects, to whom in this case it shall apperteyn, to permty and suffer the said Polydorus Virgilius feasably and quietly to enjoy the hole effect, tenour, and purport of theis our Letters Patents, upon th'only sight of the same, without any maner of lett, impedyment, or molestation to the contrarie hereof, as they and every of them tender our pleasuer and good contentation in that behalfe.

Provided always that the tenths, first fruyts, dismes, subsidies, and other devoyers due or to be due unto us or our successors, kings of England, and all other duyeties lawfully accustomed to be paid and born to any other person out of the said archedeaconrie and prebend, be from tyme to tyme duly born and supportyd of the revennes and proffits of the same as apperteyneth ; and further that the said Polidorus doo, or cause to be done, all and every such thing and things as by the laws and orders of the realms, already establyshed or hereafter to be establyshed, he shall be bound to doo or cause to be done by reason of the said archedeaconrie and prebende. Although expresse mention, &c. In witnes wherof, &c. Teste Rege apud Westmonasterium secundo die Junii.

PER BREVE DE PRIVATO SIGILLO.

NUM. VI.

Polydore Vergil's Letter to Queen Mary I. upon her Accession to the English Throne.

[Harl. MS. 6929, fol. 149. *Orig.*]

Salve Regina, Virgo, Maria brevi futura renascentis Regni genetrix. Namque scire licet Anglia regnum ab initio septem habuisse reges, et eos

tam diu inter se conflxisse, donec ad extreum potestas ad unum pervenerit. Postea secuti sunt reges, qui illud ipsum potentia, autoritate, nomine, opibus, legibus auxerunt, item religione, literis nobilitarunt, templisque passim atque alijs ædificijs ornarunt, sic ut ei non alterum fermè par foret, cum vicissitudo rerum cum mutatione temporum, pervaserit in animos quorundam multo infirmiores, qui à religione in primis aberrantes, remoto Dei metu, non dubitaverint facere contra rempublicam conjurationem post homines natos longe exitiosissimam. Sed ecce Deus Optimus Maximus vocavit te ad imperium, salutemque populi in tua tutela ac præsidio esse voluit. Quare, electissima prudentissimâque Regina, tibi persuadere debes, hanc esse divinam dexteræ exæelsi mutationem, et tibi occasionem datam, quomodo posses regnum tuum undique quassatum, bonis vel moribus ac institutis spoliatum in pristinum reducere statum, quamprimum errata, delicta, peccata hactenus per licentiam commissa piè, modicè, severèque emendando, corrigendo. Ex quo profectò deinde in omni memoria seculorum, meritò diceris tanti Regni nova et sola genitrix fuisse. Quippe illud ipsum parvo sanè negotio efficies, si à principio delegeris consiliarios, viros graves, modestos, prudentes, qui studio reipublicæ commoda quærant. Porro si princeps optimus sit, et malos habeat consiliarios, nihil omnino, uti divinus Plato ait, bene sperandum est de republica, quia unus bonus facile à multis potest depravari. Contrà si malus sit qui regnat, et probos habeat circa se principes viros, nihil procul dubio est desperandum, quoniam unus itidem ad bonitatem et virtutem deduci potest à plurimis. Hinc igitur, Regina sanctissima, satis constat oportere regem habere domi suæ senatum et consilium ex optimis quibusque viris constitutum: id quod si Majestati tuae similiter facere libuerit, certe quidem tu ut justitiæ cultrix et in summa atque semperna gratia apud Deum temet, et in magna gloria apud cunctos mortales laudabiliter pones. Vale. Ego vero homo senecta jam ætate volui te Dominam sicut servus literis salutare, officij causa, quod deinceps coram sæpius præstaboo. Die 5 Augusti 1553.

Eiusdem M^{ts} T.

Servulus POLY. VERGILIUS.

THREE BOOKS
OF
POLYDORE VERGIL'S HISTORY.

HENRY THE SIXTH.

THE XXIIJ^{TIE} BOOKE OF POLIDORE VIRGILL OF THE IISTORIE
OF ENGLANDE.

ALTHOUGH the Englishe affaires did seeme somewhat weakned by the death of king Henrye, the noblemen neverthelesse determined to renew the warres with valiaunt courage, and to make preparation, as well at home as abroade, of all thinges that might be necessary for forthwith as oportunitie did serve. Humfrey duke of Glocester returned againe into England, and, assembling the nobilitie, made relation what his brother king Henry had geven in charge upon his death-bed, and in what estate the Frenche affaires did stande. After that the nobles had conceaved all thinges, it was agreed, that the government of the realme should be committed to the duke of Glocester hymself, according to the kinges commaundement, who tooke upon him that charge; and to thintent he should not at any time afterward repent eyther of deede or direction, as a man mindfull of others and forgetfull of himselfe, he beganne to governe with high commendation, and to provide for, place, and prepare all thinges apperteyning to the honor of the realme, and profite of the common wealth. At the very first he had speciall care to this, that Henry his nephewe

The duke
of Glostere
made Pro-
tector.

might be trayned up vertuously, and did procure him to be committed unto Katherine his mother, whom he had brought into England with him a litle before, and did use reverently with all frendshipp and curtesie. And so having established civil and private causes, he beganne afterward to prepare with like diligence whatsoever was needefull for the use of warres. And making forthwith a levie of souldiers, whomsoever he thought meete for the warres eyther in Englande or in Fraunce. Then he commanded to be in readynes with all furniture, and appoynted over them centurions, and other captaines, skilfull of martiall discipline, that, when occasion should require, they might be readie. After these thinges, he levied, by authoritie of parliament, a great masse of money to support the necessary charges of the warres, so that there should not be want of any thing to the hinderaunce thereof.

A parlia-
ment
somoned.

The duke
of Bedford
regent of
Fraunce.

Charles the
French
king dieth.

While that the duke of Glocester disposed matters thus in Englande, on thother side of the sea John duke of Bedford, whom as chiefe directour of all actions they called Regent of Fraunce, with Phillip duke of Burgoigne, provided with like care for all thinges that were necessary, but principally he labored to bring under subjection Charles the Dolphin, even as king Henry had purposed in minde. When as loe, Charles the king departed this life, by reason of whose death there chaunced great chaunge of thinges in Fraunce, which was so commodious for the Dolphin's affaires, as that it seemed God himselfe had speciall care for the conservation thereof; for right manye of the nobles of Fraunce, who before that time, partly fearing the English puissance, and partly afryayde least the breache of their allegiance might turne to their owne displeasure, had holden with king Charles, after that they knewe the king was deade, did no more regard at all by what maner or meane (so that by one or other) they might expell the Englishe nation, recover ther countrey, and unite themselves againe to their owne people. And so at one instant they went to

the Dolphin, submitting themselves and all that they had to his protection, which when the duke of Bedford, being regent, and the duke of Burgoigne did perceave, they both disposed garrisons to fitt and covenable places, and gathered their armie together all at once; and calling their noblemen unto them, the regent remade an oration, admonishing them not to falsifie their fayth, and that they should neyther be authours, ne yet suffer young king Henry to be defrauded of his graundfathers kingdome, by enuye of moste false and forsworne men; nor the enemitie betwixt England and Fraunce, nowe for a good while since extinguished, to be againe renewed; and howe that they should call to remembraunce that the kingdome of Englande and Fraunce was by eter-nall league and consent of minde become, of twoo, one of the goodlyest kingdomes that ever was, and of late so established as that no humane force was able to withstande it. And though they had receaved some detriment by warres, yet they might within short time turne the same to their benefite, if they wold honor, obey, and love Henry their king, and determine resolutely to persecute his enemies, and so should be the best to serve their liege lorde valiauntly and faythfully with all diligence. After this oration ended, Henry was proclaymed King of Englande and Fraunce by common consent of them all, and the lordes there present were commaunded to sweare homage unto him, and the residue throughout the whole realme were bounde to take the same othe. When these thinges were thus done, they sent for their forces from all partes, and furnished themselves with all thinges to the renewing of warre. Likewise in Englande he was proclaymed king by the name of Henry the Sixt, and all thinges were done in his name, that so the honorable stile of a kingly maiestie might be bruted amongst the people. As for the Dolphin, he was at that time in Poyetiers, who upon intelligence of his father's death was in minde partly sory and partly glad: sory for the

The re-gentes ora-tione to the nobilitye of Fraunce.

H.6 crown-ed Kinge of England & France, and homage done to him.

death of his father, but gladd that the government was so commed unto him, whereby being advaunce to the title of a king he conceaved good hope of habilitie easily to defende the same: and therfore calling togetheres the noble men and chiefe of his faction,

*Charles the
7th of
France
establis-
shed.*

he nameth himselfe king Charles the Seventh, and commaundeth by edict that he should be generally so called; and so liste up with an assured confidence, once at the last to expell his enemies out of the countrey, he maketh preparation for warre with greater courage than before. There was forthwith even at the beginning litle skirmishes made upon both parties, as occasion did serve, thone to invade the other upon the sodaine. But within a while after, when their armies were on eyther syde assembled, their dealinges was as in puissaunt warres moste hott and perillous; for Charles saylyng (as the common saying is) with a prosperous winde, intermitting no delaye, wherby himself might casually be weakened and his enemie made stronger, gathered a great armie

*Meulane,
a towne in
Normandy,
wonne by the
Frenche.*

Meulane, a witlin fewe dayes, taking on hande sodainly to beseige Meulane, a towne in Normandie, situate upon Seyne, and wanne it forthwith, killing all the Englishemen that were in garrison there, not one lefte alive;

*Meulane
recovered
by the duke
of Bedford.*

which when the duke of Bedforde understoode, he sent to recover the towne Thomas Montacute earle of Salisbury, a man for hawtines of courage and valiancie rather to be compared with the auncient Romanes then with men of that age, and John Lucenberg, who was generall of the horsemen to the duke of Burgoigne, with a choice company of souldiers. They besieged the towne, and, because Charles had lefte slender supply there, they wonne it by assault quickly, and upon the Frenche garrison used suche severitie, as that not one of all escaped. After which happie exploye, the earle of Salesbury departed with part of his armie into Champaigne, whereof he was lieutenant, and within a fewe dayes after besieged Sens, a towne of Brye (which is all that part lying betweene the rivers of Seyne and Marne), and winneth

Sedanam.

it by assault, killing all that were lefte for the tuition therof, and Sens wone amonges them Gwilliam Marine, their chiefe captaine. The by the E. of Parisians in the meane time perceaving king Charles to increase in forces dayly, and conceaving hope thereupon that they should returne within a while under his dominion, which was their greatest desire, to thintent that they should not be suspected unto thinglishe partie of treason the meane while, untill that the matter should fall out according to their heartes desire, sent therfore ambassadours into England unto king Henry to require ayde ; unto whom, after great thankes geven for their dutifullnes, aunswere was made that they should continue their obedience and loyaltie to the king ; for there should neyther ayde nor succour want unto their citie, so that they would not be negligent in their owne behalfe, nor yelde unto the enemy.

Also in the very selfe same yere, which was the yere of our salvation 1423, and the first of king Henries reigne, Humfrey duke of Gloucester maryed Jacobine princesse of Bavaire, who had been maried to John duke of Brabant as yet living ; which matter made men greatly to mervaile, that the duke of Gloucester would needes, contrary to all law and right, mary another mans wife ; but the duke of Gloucester more esteemed the contract and mariage of so riche a ladie then any admiration or rumour of people. But John duke of Bedford, Phillip duke of Burgoigne, and John duke of Britane mett togethers at Amiens, and renewed the league amongst them, with these further conditions : That every one league should mutually ayde another, altogether, defende king Henry by force of armes, and deliver him from all injurie. That league was confirmed with a new affinitie, for Joane sister to the Duke of Burgoigne was placed in mariage to the duke of Bedforde, who at that time was unmarried, whom he upon dissolution of that treatie tooke with him to Troys, and there did celebrate an honorable mariage, from whence he returned to Paris.

In the meane time certaine citizens there, who obeyed the Englishe government against their willes, seeing the duke of Bedford so farre absent, determined to receave king Charles into the towne, and, thinking that so profitable occasion was not to be slipped, they gave him intelligence of their practise, and appoynted a day when he should repaire to the gates; but their perillous pollicie prevayled not, but was to the destruction of the devisers thereof; for the duke of Bedforde came the while, sooner then the conspiratours weened; and being informed of the conspiracie, did punishe them that were giltie of that offence. After that, conceaving thereby howe the citizens were affected, the duke tooke order with all diligence and carefulnes, for fortifying of the towne, disposing of watche and warde every where, preventing the subtilities of the French, leaving nothing unprovided for on his owne behalfe, reposing on their behalfe no confidence at all. While this

Crauantum. was a doing king Charles besieged Cravaunt, whither came forthwith the earle of Salesburye, and William Pole earle of Suffolke, with four thousand souldiers, and joyning battaile, did kill, discomfite, and chase the Frenchemen, whereof two thousand were slayne, and four hundred taken, amongst whom was the erle of Bowhan, Constable of Fraunce, who was soone raunsomed, and returned againe to the warres. After this fortunate successe, the earle of Salsbury understanding that the French men had in the meane

Laudunensi time certaine pyles in the territory of Laonnoys, did hasten thither, and with like good fortune recovereth all the sayde holdes. On

Compendio. thother side, at the very same time, the townes of Compeigne and

Croteio. Crotoy, which is in the countrey about Turwan, did yielde unto the French men; but the comming thither of the Englishe was suche terror unto the garrisons there lefte, as they were quickly recovered also. While this stirre was in Fraunce, the duke of Gloucester having mustered for the making out of souldiers in Englande, sent ten thousand well furnished with armour and

A plot layd
to have be-
trayed Paris
to the
French.

The
French
men dis-
comfited at
Cravante.
Bucanus.

weapon to the duke of Bedford unto Paris, who were committed to the government of the earle of Salisbury, and of Robert Willoughbie, a man of noble birth and great forecast, and of William Pole. Himselfe had in his retinewe a thousand eight hundred horsemen and eyght thousand footemen. With these forces the duke of Bedford, removing from Paris, marched into Normandie, to se if he could any where provoke Charles to any indifferent conflict; for, so longe as he was unvanquished, himselfe thought his owne affaires woulde never be in very good case. But when his enemy would no where discover himselfe, the duke besieged the most strong castle of Yvers, being upon the frontiers of Normandie. There was within the same a great bande of choyse souldiers, who defended themselves valiantly; but the duke casting a great trenche and rampire about the same, and assaulting it with mynes and engines, forced them to yeld within fewe days after that it was first begoonn to be besieged. Charles at that time laye at Towres, who, being certified that Yvery was besieged, seemed not to make great accompt of the matter; but partly trusting to the naturall strength of the place, and partly to the force of the garrison within the same, was busied onely about the levying of an armie, whereby he might be able with equall force to encounter his enemie in open fielde. And therfore, when he had gathered a more large number, he sent the duke of Alanson to relieve the towne, commanding him that, if occasion did serve, he should not refuse the fight. The duke marched forward with all speede, and, perceaving before he did approche the place that the castle was yeeded, therfore chaunging his purpose, he diverted to Vernoill, wanne it by assault, and killed the most part of the Englishe garrison; the which towne, being well fortified, was geven unto him by Charles, for that he had a good while before claymed the same to be parcell of his inheritance. After that the duke of Bedford had intelligence hereof, he marched to Vernoill without delay, in good

10,000 soldiers sent out of England.
Yveres besieged and won.
Turomibus.
Vernoille recovered by the Frenche.

arraye of battaile, and in the same order came even to the very tentes of his enemies. The Frenche, somewhat appalled by reason of the sodaine arrivall, tossed the matter amongst themselves what best were to doo. The most part were of minde to tarrye in their tentes till they might see what their enemies would take on hand ; for being well experieuced that often-times before they had been vanquished, when as they joyned battaile with the Englishe men, they were loth to fight hand to hand ; but when they sawe their enemies armie approche nigher and nigher, taking to them hart of grace, with howling and rejoicing, as their maner is, they take wepon in hand, and set themselves in array before their tents. The battaile was begonn with shott, but, when the shott ceased, they marched forward, and drawing their blades mutually, ranne together with great cryes. The fight was forcible and continuall, and so throughly maintained of both parties that harde was it to judge whither the victorie would incline. The slaughter was great on eyther partie, the stirre was equall, and the maner of fight likewise. Where moste daunger was, there was every man with lively courage most readie to resist and repulse ; so the battaile continued more then foure howres in equall balance. All this while the duke of Alanson rested not to pray and exhort his soldiers not to quaile, nor to suffer their enemies, even now at the poynt of flight, to be conquerours. But the duke of Bedford was no lesse provident and painefull to go from place to place, to encourage his souldiers to enforce the fight everye where ; who at the last perceiving the Frenchmen, being faint with labor and travaile, to be more feeble in fight then before (for such is the nature of the Frenche, that they are not able to abide a long battaile, that to make their enemies afraide, they will geve a prowde bragge readily,

A greate
Battel wone
by the duke
of Bedford
at Vernayll

but not accustomed to mainteyne the same out afterward), then, therefore, with might and main he assailed them, and all his whole armie folowing him, did with such force invade thenemie, as that

first he caused them geave grounde, and immediatly drove them headlong to the flight. There was killed in that battaile five thousand French men, whereof the chiefe were therle of Boughan, admirall of Fraunce, and John Steward, a noble man of Scotland, who, as we have before mentioned, came to the ayde of Charles, and tenn Frenche noblemen more that were of government, and had charge. There were taken about two hundred, and amongst them John duke of Alanson; but the report is, that there were killed and taken fifteen thousand. Of thenglish partie there were wanting two thousand, partly horsmen, partly footmen. The Frenche men receaved this discomfiture in the yere of our salvation 1425, and the thirde of king Henries reigne.

Many noblemen of
Scotlande
slain in
the same
battle.

1425.

The duke of Bedford, after thobtayning of so honorable and great victorie, incontinent kneeled downe upon his knees, holding up his handes, and yeelded unto God immortall thankes for so great a benefite, and for a certaine space weeping for joy, he prayed devoutly, afterward givinge the Frenche men leave to depart he receaved againe Vernoill, and, placing therein a garrison, returned unto Paris. But the earle of Salisbury went to besiege Mountes, a most rich and stronge towne; the citizens whereof, although they were in great terror, both by reason of the sodeine approche of thenemie, and also of the name of Salisbury, which was very famous, as well amongst his enemies as his owne people and countrimen, yet their care and preparation was great to defende themselves, insomuch that the towne was furnished within throughly with a multitude of most valiant souldiers. Thenglish earle placed his tentes as nere the towne as he possiblie might without annoyance of his people, and did so shake and batter the walles with brazen peeces, which the Italians call bombardes, the use whereof (being begonn but in the yere of our Lorde God 1370,* say, M.CCC.LXXX.—ED.

Vernoille
recovered
by the
English.
Mounts be-
segded and
wonne.

First
beginning
of gones,
1370.

* All the Latin Editions of "Polydore Vergils History," and his book "de Inventoribus Rerum," say, M.CCC.LXXX.—ED.

as in the 11th booke of the Inventours of thinges, the 11th chapter, is declared) was not so well knownen before that time to the Frenche men, that within fewe dayes a great part of the walles about the towne was beatt downe to the grounde. Upon the sight whereof thinhabitaunts of Mountes, wythout hope of relief which unto that day they had expected, having obtained leave for the garrison of souldiers there safely to depart, yeelded the Towne.

St. Susanes And the same being strongly fortified and furnished with souldiers, takene.

William earle of Suffolke was made captaine thereof, and the armie was conveyed to St. Susannes, a towne within the same region, of great renowme. One Ambrose Delore was captaine thereof, a notable and famous man of warre, and had there with him a great crewe of souldiers. After that the earle of Salesbury had well viewed the situation and nature of the place, he made all thinges ready to geve thassault at that part where the towne seemed to be least fortified ; ladders were laide too, and at the first shourt and assault they attained almost to the topp of the walles, but the townesmen with the Frenche garrison, who durst not issue out of the towne to skirmish with the enemy, begann then to make resistance, and repulsed the force in all that they might. The assault was continued that day and often afterward, with great bloudshed and slaughter on both sides ; but thinhabitantes were nevertheless earnest in fight. As soone as the earle of Salesbury sawe and understoode howe that in such maner of bickering he could nothing prevaile, he withdrew his souldiers into their tentes : and first environing the wall with trenche and diche, afterwarde gave commandement that such as had charge of the great shott shoulde laye their ordinance to the weakest places, and so day and night batter the wall ; which was done without delay, so that within fewe dayes there were made large breaches therein ; wherwithall Delore was put in terror, so that he yeelded th^t towne, payng for the safe passage away of him and his, two thousand crownes, which was to depart without armor, every man with one onely garment.

The castle
of Mayone
takene.

After that, the earle of Salesbury tooke the castle of Maion, and divers other townes, partly by force, partly by composition. In the meane time the fame of this geere was spread over all Fraunce, by reason whereof some were stricken in feare, some in heavines ; but in England, upon the receit of letters of victory, which the duke of Bedford sent very often, all men did leape for joye, that their governors in warre and captaines had vanquished in plaine field, and had gotten so many townes at once ; wherefore the lordes of the counsaile tooke order with Henry Chicheley, archbishop of Canterbury, that he should appoint publike prayers to be made forthwith, whereby it might appere that they did rather ascribe those victories to God then to their owne forces. During that time also, king Charles, having receaved so many discommodities altogether, thought not to omitt any care necessary as towching his owne affaires, but gathered newe supplye of soldiers on every side, and principally demaunded ayde of James king of Scottes, which he did not only not denye, but immediately sent Robert Patillok, a bolde and hardie gentleman, with a company of valiant souldiers, to joyne with Archebold, although that the duke of Gloucester, governor of England, did repine much therat, and dealt with king James by ambassadours, that he would not take on hande to doo contrary to the league which he had made a little before with king Henry : but frendshipp prevailed more then justice with the Scottish king.

Whilst that the English affaires had prosperous successe in Fraunce, the duke of Gloucester and Jacobine his wife passed the seas, and tooke from John duke of Brabant Mounts, the most famous citie in all Henault, and all other possessions whatsoeuer the said John helde, as in the right of his wife Jacobine, which dealing the duke of Burgoigne Phillip, who was a patron of the duke of Brabantes cause, tooke in evill part : and not mistrusting but that the duke of Gloucester would, for the old good-will and frendshipp betwixt them twoo, yelde to that which was for his

Mena,
called in
some
Chron.
Mayon le
Juliez.

Publike
prayeres
made
throuwe
England
for the
good suc-
cesse in
France.

The Kinge
of Scots
joynes
with the
Frenche.

The duke
of Glostere
tooke
Mounts in
Fraunce, in
right of his
wife.

honor. He therefore dealt with the duke by letters, admonishing him to leave off that wicked enterprise, affirming openly, that it was as dishonorable an offence to enter upon and holde another mans possessions, as to pollute another mans bedd. But the duke of Glocester was so farre from giving eare to the wholsome councell of his frende, as, whether it were that he were blinded with love or with covetousness, he boasted that he would defend with armes the possession of those places which he had taken from the duke of Brabant. Who when as he was within short time after called againe into England of necessitie, about divers weightie affaires, left the said Jacobine in Henault with a great number of souldiers, to defend her owne possessions against the duke of Brabant. But after the duke of Glocester was departed, then loe, the duke of Brabant made warre against the woman, wherewithall, when they were both well wearied, the matter was at the last deferred to Martin the Vth, bisshop of Rome. As soone as he had

The bishop
of Rome
gave sen-
tence
against the
maryme of
the duke of
Glocester
and his
wyffe.

examined the cause, he gave sentence, as concerning the mariage with the duke of Brabant, and by his authoritie denounced the contract betwixt Jacobine and the duke of Glocester utterly voyde. And the matter so ended, Jacobine did sticke unto her former husband, and that not altogether against the will of the duke of Glocester, as whom right and reason had ruled, and the importunacie of the woman had begoon alreadie above measure to make wearie.

During this time, Edmond duke of Somerset, who was lieftenaunt of Normandie, repaired St. James Towne, which had been rased long time before, adjoyning upon the Britans, and fortified it with a strong garrison. This Edmund succeeded in that earldome unto his brother John the first duke of Somerset, who dying lefte behinde him one onely daughter called Margaret, who (as shalbe spoken of otherwhere) brought forth unto Edmund, erle of Richmonde, king Henry the Seventh, and John the first earle begott the saide second John and Edmond his brother, which first earle

(as we have before declared), Richard the Second made marquise Dorsett, because he issued from John duke of Lancaster, his uncle, begotten of Catherine his thirrd wife. Hereof I thought good to geve warning, that the saide Margarete had no wronge, though she succeeded not John her father in the earldome of Somersett; for, by reason of an auncient custome in England, dukes and earles have their titles of dignitie of the counties, within the which oftentimes they have no possessions nor patrimonie; but their revenue consisteth of lands and possessions which they have otherwher; wherefore, it maketh litle matter who succeede in those titles, which the Kinges maiestie at his pleasure bestoweth as he list upon them whom he maketh dukes or earles, as before in the 19th booke I have explained. But we have digressed sufficiently. While that the fortune of warre was in this sort variable, the duke of Britaine, remembiring howe that in times past the Englishmen had geven attempt to gaine soveraigntie in the earldome of Britany, and fearing presently that when the Frenche should be conquered they would cast an eye to his earldome, determining with himselfe to drive away and remove the contagion of such disease imminent, as he untruly suspected, revolted unto king Charles, whom that matter much encouraged, being for the evill successe of late attemptes in some terror. Wherefore, for the duke's cause, he made his brother Arthure, whom the state of England had created earle of Richmonde, who also presentlye with his brother had revolted, admirall of Fraunce: which charge the earle of Bougan of late had, who was killed at the battaile of Vernoile. The duke lived not longe after, and lefte behinde him three sonnes, Fraunces, Peter, and Gyles: Fraunces succeeded his father; but I will returne to Arthur. He by reason of his newe office, desirous of renowne, thought he should doo very acceptable service to the French King if he might winne the towne of St. James, and cast out the English garrison; wherefore, gathering togethers almoste twentie thousand St. James de Beneon.

Arthure,
brother to
the E. of
Britany
made E. of
Richmond.

men, he besieged the towne, and began to assault it couragiously. The Englishmen suspecting no such matter, were troubled with this sodaine attempt, and did hardly defend the gates: but by litle and litle taking heart of grace, and consulting together, they begann to make resistance; and in the meane time, part issuing out at the castle gate, which is towarde the walles, and part sallying out of the towne otherwhere, made head, and gave charge upon thenemy before and behinde. Then the Frenchmen disordered with this sodaine alarme, being out of hope that it was preignable by assault, some ranne away, some were killed, and some drowned in a lake or dieche nigh unto the town. And so Arthure, omitting the seige, returned to the campe which was harde by, whether also many of his company had before withdrawn themselves out of the chase. The night following the Frenchmen were in great chafe for evill handling of this matter, every one putting the blame thereof to other (for the state of warres is such, that in victorie cowardes will boast and bragg, but upon a discomfiture the very best souldiers shalbe burdened with dishonor), so that a mutinewe rose sodainly thereof, and every man forsooke the campe and departed, though that Arthure did earnestly require the contrary, especially because they should leave their ordinaunce unto thenemy. But Arthure, very sorowfull that so great an attempt should fall out so evill, thinking by some valiant exploit to put away the dishonor of that shamefull flight, marched from thence with all speede into Angeow, and every where as he went wasted, destroyed, spoyled, and tooke one or two townes, with which furious fact all the rage was sodainly appeased. About the same time the duke of Bedford departed into England, partly to remove certaine privie grudges from amongst the noble men proceeding upon envy, which were fitt to be speedily layde apart, partly to levie a newe suplye of souldiers. Soone after his arrivall he called the Councell together, and, when the differences amongst the nobilitie was throughly examined,

The duke
of Bedford
returnes
into Eng-
land.

those who were found to be in fault, were by just desert, and by most honorable assent of the whole borde, rebuked that they should in the time of forreyne warres, for revenge of private injuries, stirre the people at home to sedition and uprokes; at which time, most principally of all other, it was every mans part to upholde unitie of minde and concorde. He after exhorted them to defend with all their devoire the dignitie and high reputation of king Henry, under whose fortunate government at that time all Fraunce was in a maner subdued to the English empire; whose wordes so moved the noble men which mutually hated one another, that by and by they agreed, and by authoritie of parliament a great levie of men was appoynted to be made; which matters brought to pass according to his desire, and the state of the common wealth reformed, as the matter and time required, the duke returned into Fraunce with as much celerite almoste as he came from thence, accompanied with a multitude of choyse souldiers, whereof he made chiefe captaine John lord Talbot, a man amongst men of John Lo.
reputation in deede esteemed both for nobilitie of birth and Talbott
haultines of courage, of most honorable and high renowne, who passeth into
was afterward conqueror in so many sundry conflictes, that both Fraunce.
his name was redowted above all others through Fraunce, and yet
-contineweth of famous memory universally at this day. There
folowed the duke, Henry, both bisshopp of Winchester and cardinall of St. Eusebius, sonne to John duke of Lancaster by his
thirde wife, called, by reason of the place where he was born,
Beauforde, a man of great providence and sufficiencie, who most of
all other supported the English affaires, being often in distresse,
with councell and treasure. The duke of Bedford, a little after his
return into Fraunce, had intelligence by espials, that Montarge,
which is a towne within the territory of Orlance, was without gar-
rison, insomuch that it might easily be surprised: whereupon he
sent thither part of the retinew which was at Paris, and the whole

supply which he had brought out of England under the government of Richarde earle of Warwicke, who tooke as great journeys as he possibly might untill he came to the towne: but, understanding that the same was furnished with men more strongly than the report had been, would not assault it, but, encamping himselfe nigh thereto, besieged it rounde about. These doeings came quickly, what by common report, what by messages, unto the eare of Arthure, admirall of Fraunce, who perceaving the matter to require diligence, and that himself could not at that time relieve the towne, sent forthwith Stephen Hyre, a Frenche knight, with most part of his armie, to raise the siege. After that the saide Frenche men were come thither, they, trusting to their multitude, wherein they did muche excede, set upon their enemies campe, and breaking the trenches thereof after great slaughter, put the English men to flight. I finde written of some authours that there was 1500 English men either killed with the sword, or drowned in the next river that runneth into Yon, the bridge which was over the same being broken with the swey of people that thronged over the same. But at that time it seemed there could not happen to the Frenche partie anye thing so joyfull, which was not intermingled some other way with heavines: for at the very selfsame season Nicholas Browgh, sent by the duke of Somersett to annoy thenemy within the boundes of Britaine, (who, as we have a litle before shewed, had yeelded themselves to the amitie of the Frenche,) departed, sending out his horsmen all abroade, by whom the forrow was so mainteyned every waye, without resistance, as that all villages and buildinges every where were burned, great bootie was driven from all places, townes of small strength were taken, and the inhabitantes of the same cyther killed or ledd away captive to be raunsomed. The saide boundes being in this sort wasted and destroyed, Nicholas retyred unto the armie in Normandie with huge bootie, and without any wounde receaved by himselfe, or any of his retinewe.

Borthus.
Nicholas
Browghe
revolts
to the
Frenche.*

Browgh, sent by the duke of Somersett to annoy thenemy within the boundes of Britaine, (who, as we have a litle before shewed, had yeelded themselves to the amitie of the Frenche,) departed, sending out his horsmen all abroade, by whom the forrow was so mainteyned every waye, without resistance, as that all villages and buildinges every where were burned, great bootie was driven from all places, townes of small strength were taken, and the inhabitantes of the same cyther killed or ledd away captive to be raunsomed. The saide boundes being in this sort wasted and destroyed, Nicholas retyred unto the armie in Normandie with huge bootie, and without any wounde receaved by himselfe, or any of his retinewe.

* Such is the side note.—ED.

This discomfiture of their confederates did somewhat appall and diminish the loftines of the Frenche, not without cause, being otherwise verye haultie for the late victorie, whom on thother side, againe, the returne of John duke of Alanson did greatly encourage: for he, being taken the yere before at the battaile of Vernoille, was let home out of England about the same time, paying for his raunsome a hundred thousand crownes.

While that these thinges were done otherwhere, thinhabitantes of Mayne were solicited to revolt, for the chiefe men in the citie, who long before grudged at the government of thenglish nation, when they understande that the Britains refusing the amitie of England had submitted themselves to the protection of king Charles, supposing that his side would shortly prevaile, resolved to reeave the Frenche men into the towne. And having devised the mean and time, howe and when to execute their intent, they discovered by moste secret messengers their privie conspiracie unto the chiefe captaines of the Frenche armie, lying in campe not farre off, who, upon so good oportunitie gotten, commended greatly the citizens, and promised to be readie in time, laboring them, nevertheless, with all faire speeche and promise of rewarde to hasten diligently the performance of that which they had determined. When the day came, the Frenche captaines drew nigh secretly in the night, and, geving signe of their arrivall by a blase of fire, approached the towne. The watch of the citie which was upon the walles, awaiting their comming, espied the fire afarre off, and gave the same signe againe: then was the fire put out on both parties, and the Frenche men presently proceeded to the gate. The conspiratours within came also sodenly unto the gates; they killed the watch sleeping in their beddes, and opened the gate. The Frenche men entered with their footmen, commanding their horsemen to stay, that, as occasion should require, they might have the field open freely to ride at their pleasure: then they let goe their souldiers every where

Mayne was
soliseted to
revolte, and
by treason
gotten.

to kill thenglish men. The stirre and noyse was such, as in a towne sacked is accustomed; but what the matter meant, not one man did certainly conceave, except only a fewe that were of the conspiracie; the rest of the citizens beleaved that the English men were risen up to sacke and spoyle the towne: the English, againe, thought that the sedition was by meane of some treason wrought

The earle
of Suffolke
sente to the
Lo. Talbot
for ayde.

by the townsmen. William earle of Suffolke, lieutenant of the place, awaked with the first tumult, after that he understoode by the crye of his people, who being absent that night by chaunce from their warde, were killed every where through the towne, that the Frenche men were lett in, fled quickly, with the garrison which he had, into the castle, which is situate at the gate called commonly the gate of St. Vincent, and from thence sent speedie messengers unto John lord Talbot, who lay at Alanson, with letters, to demaund and earnestly praye him of reliefe. The lord Talbot, after he had read the letters, repaireth thither with an armie of light harnessed men well appoynted, sendinge worde before to the lieftenant that he would come to relieve him by and by, and praying them all not to be dismayed. In the meane time the Frenche men rove like rulers in the towne thus taken, and fearing nothing, became so ydle and carelesse, as though there were no daunger imminent from thenemy: for they fell to refresshing of themselves after their great travaile susteyned, and thought they had the Englishmen so shutt up in that turret wherinto they were fledd, that they would not possibly attempt any warlike practise, but would incontinent treate for the safetie of their lives. Howbeit, the lord Talbot tooke great journeys, and was forthwith at hande, who being reeaved of his countrymen in at the gate which they did enjoy, entred the towne, and even as they looked for, so they founde all thinges without order or care, as in prosperitie is accustomed; no warders before the gates, and the same wide open; the vanquisher roving, and onely rejoicing for the

Mayne is
recoverd
againe by
the Lo.Tal-
bot.

libertie of the citie, and slaughter of the enemy. By that occasion was the town taken againe of the Englishmen. Thus were the French conquerours killed every where, and had not so much leysure, as eyther to assemble togethers, or yet to arme themselves ; wherefore every man, for safetie, feld to the gates, but finding them kept by thenemy, they were sodenly in despaire to be saved by flight, and therefore begann then to crye for mercie ; whereupon the lord Talbot proclaymed, that every man should disarne himselfe, and that the unarmed should be forborne, and the armed onely killed. So the Frenchmen conceaving hope of life, cast away their weapons, and yelded to their enemy : part of them were killed, and part committed ; which exploit having taken fortunate effect, the lorde Talbot departed to Ponthoyse, and took it. But earle William, the lieftenant, made inquirie upon the conspiracie of thnhabitantes of Mayne, and punished such as were founde to be principalls therein.

Seing that the English affaires had at that time such prosperous successe, Thomas Montacute conceaved advisedly good hope to winne Orleaunce. That is a most mightie citie, which of olde time was called *Genere*, scituate upon the river of Seyne, in that part of the countrie which sometime was termed the Gawle Celtyk. But because the scituation of the place was naturally of passing strength, he thought good to conferre thereupon with others, though himselfe were thonely man by whose prowesse thenglish nation was universally much more terrible to the French men, upon whom the whole state of the common wealth of England did depende, as appered plainly afterward when he was dead : and therefore might have ordeyned and done many thinges after his owne fantasie, for he was a man alwaye of most ready witt and mature judgement, valiant to enterprise great matters, and in greatest daunger politike ; neyther body nor minde would ever yeld to painfulnes nor travaile ; by reason whereof there was none

Ponthoyse
taken by
the lord
Talbot.

Genebum
Orleance
besiegde
by the E.
of Sales-
bury.

in whom the men of warre had more confidence, nor under whom they durst so well attempt any daungerous exployte. Wherefore, after that deliberation had bene a pretie space of so weightie a cause, though the matter was thought hard, and of most great difficultie, yet for because he, measuring the same according to the hawtines and forces of his minde and body, thought it but easie to be atchieved ; all men, therefore, did alowe his opinion ; wherefore thearle, full of good hope and courage, having provided all thinges needfull for the besieging of the towne, accompanied with William earl of Suffolke and the lord Talbot, conducted his armie towards Orleanee, and encamped himselfe not past a mile from the same : then he drewe neere and viewed the site therof, the walles, and what part seemed strongest with wall, water, or warrier, which when he had perfectly viewed, seing no souldiers abrode without the gates, he approched even to the walles. Here he tooke counsell upon the naturall situation of the place ; for there was a bridge upon the citie of Leyre, whereby vietuals were continually brought out of the countrie into the towne : there were also certaine other lesser townes not farre off, standing upon the water side, which also relieved the towne with necessaries. These did he first bring in subjection, and fortified with garrison. In like maner also he caused the bridge to be kept with watch and warde : moreover, he erected in longe circuit about, certaine fortresses, furnishing them with men and artillerie ; afterward, derivining a trenche from fort to fort, he environed the towne, and planting his ordnance in convenient place, beganne to annoy the same. On thother side, those of Orleanee, a litle before the comming of the enemy, prepared all thinges necessary for their defencce ; they burned the suburbs of the towne, they spoyled the countrey rounde about of all kinde of vietuals and forrage, gathering the same into the towne. And when they saw their enemies to have compassed the towne, then they planted ordinance against ordinance, they made rampires and

countermures all amongst within, least by reason of any breache that might happen to be made in the walles, the Englishmen might enter; they also prepared number of men sufficient to defende the walles, whereof they made captaine Stephan Hyre, and John the bastard sonne of Charles their duke, taken a fewe yeres before at the battaile of Agincourt, and as yet remayning prisoner in England. And so the English earle approched the walles, and begann to geve thereunto very sharpe assault. There was dayly skirmishing by reason of the citizens sallying sometime out of the towne, otherwhile fighting from their bulwarkes and towres of defence; but the Englishmen so placed their archers, whereof the number was great, that right many of the towne were wounded, and the terror of that shott was great. While this adoe was of eyther side, king Charles sent Lewes duke of Burbon to ayde them of Orleaunce with an armie of men well appoynted; he hearing by the way, that certaine bondes of English souldiers should bring from Paris into the campe great store of victualls, determined to set upon them unwares, and chaunging his purposed journey, marched towardes them: John Fastolf, captaine of the said companies, had intelligence of his comming, by meane of scurryers, and forthwith caused the cariage to stay, araying his men in order rounde about the same. That done, he sent forth his horsemen, and receaved the charge of thenemy approaching with such courage and withal made such slaughter, as that the Burbonian retired of his owne accord, with the losse of more than two hundred of his men; who proceeding to Orleaunce, got harde entrance with a very fewe. But John Fastolfe, marching at ease, came unto the campe with the said victuals, voyde of all hinderance or lett. The newes thereof brought by messengers into England, made there a double joye: for at the same time, which was about the eyght ides of November, Henry being but a childe of eyght yeres

The duke
of Burbon
entered into
Orleance.

H. 6
crowned
King in
England,
1429.

The E. of
Salisbury
slaine in
a windowe.

Alis, d. &
heire to the
E. of Sales-
bury,
maried to
Richard
Neville.

age, was with great solemnitie after the auncient custome crowned, which was the yere of our salvation 1429.

Thus the siege of Orleance continued the more part of winter, with great peril, many woundes, and much slaughter: for the Englishmen, in cruell assaultes, did every where eyther kill or wounde many of their enemies. Againe, the towne valiantly defending, requited them the like; when, as in the meane space, the chaunce was, that the earle of Salisbury, loth to tarry longer, and desirous to winne the towne, one day early before sonnrise, began to viewe the same againe more earnestly then he was wont, out at a certaine windowe of buildings which he had in an high place, to thintent he might espye where to geve commodiously a newe assault; which he thought mightily to assay as one inflamed with desire eyther to winne the towne by force, or to cause it yelde. While that he was busied in this order, and by the space of 60 days did vehemently annoy the citizens, behold even sodenly eyther an yron or stone pellet, shott out of a brasen peece with great force right against the place where he stoode, did strike and breake thone side of the windowe, and drove certaine shilvers thercof into his face, wherewithall he was so wounded as that he dyed thereof two dayes after. He lefte one Alis, his onely daughter, very like him in conditions, vertue, and honor, whom, as we shall hereafter shewe, one Richard Nevill took to wife. But howe great losse the common wealth sustained through his untimely death appered evidently incontinent. Truely from that day forth the English forrain affaires beganne to quaile; which infirmite though the English nation, as a most sounde and strong body, did not feele at the first, yet afterward they suffered it as a pestilence and sicknes inwardly, by little and little decaying the strength: for immediatly after his death the fortune of warre altered, as hereafter shalbe declared in place convenient; wherefore the death of

the earle was much lamented of all the captaines in generall, who, neverthelesse, after that they had performed all things for his buriall, mainteined the siege and sought to atchieve that which the earle of Salesbury had in mind determined, which was, by what meane they might eyther take the towne by force, or, at the least, compell the citizens to yelde. William Nevill, a valiant and expert man of warre, was principally carefull and painfull in this matter : he did continually annoy the enemy, and caused his souldiers more diligently to keepe watch in the night, to mainteyne fight on the day, exhorting, fighting, and bearing out all disadvauntage with great magnanimitie. Neyther did the residue of captaines omitt any thing which they thought meete for subduing of the towne. By which meanes finally it came to passe, that those of Orleanee, almost despairing of relief, began to consult amongst themselves concerning the geving up of the towne. After that severall opinions were uttered touching the avoiding of that daunger, many did accompt and esteem it as a most high dishonor, and as evill as the utter destruction of the towne, to submitt themselves to thenglish men, cool frendes to the French nation : on thother partie, they feared the victory of thenemy, for that thereupon are wont to proceede both many mischiefes, and sometime indeede very tyranny, wherefore they supposed, that it was as well the part of unwise men not to beware hereof, as the consenting or yeelding to abide thother was to be attributed to a servile inclination. But when they sawe the matter brought in great distresse, both to avoide slander and miserable fate, they ad-judged one thing most fitt for their purpose, and that was to submitt themselves, and all that they had, under the protection of Philip duke of Burgoigne, because he was descended from the most auncient stocke of the kinges of Fraunce, and for that, as every man had conceaved opinion, the matter would so fall out in the ende, that he would once at the last forsake the English amitie.

This resolution being allowed, and the duke of Burgoignes minde herein by secret messengers knownen (which was that he would fafourably receave them, so that the duke of Bedford should like thereof) they sent ambassadours to the duke at Paris; who, after their ambassage heard, called the councell together, and declared what condicions of peace they of Orleance did offer. Some thought the yealding upon those condicions was to be admitted, to thende that so great and riche a citie might by this meane be withdrawnen from the partie of king Charles. But the duke of Bedford, and the better part of councellours thought it would be a foule, perillous, and detestable example, if a towne so longe besieged, and nowe almost taken for and in the name of king Henry, should finally come under the subjection of any others than the king-himselfe: for truelye, others would readily folowe their example of Orleance, and therefore such conditions were not to be graunted unto. This sentence tooke place, and thambassadours were aunswere, that the warres were kept for king Henry: and likewise the victory ought to be his. With this aunswere the duke dismissed thambassadours: but upon litle occasion commeth often great alteration, for two mischieves fell out thereupon. First the duke of Burgoigne, angry in minde, supposed that the English men did envy his renowme, and therefore even then begonn to be evill affected towardes them. Secondly, the Englishmen were forced afterward to leave the siege.

While that those of Orleance treat by ambassadours with thenemye for peace, king Charles gathereth forces on every side, and with faire promises seeketh to alienate the nobilitie of Fraunce from the amitie of England. Also he carefully prepareth victuals which he might send to the besieged Orleances, at which time there was brought unto him a cetaine damosell of thage of twentie yeres, or thereaboutes, a damosell so called for that she had preservyd her virginitie, who was endowed both with singuler witt,

Ambassa-
dors sent
from Or-
leance to
the duke of
Bedford,
with condi-
tions of
submis-
sion.

The ambas-
sadores
message
refused.

Orleance
releaved
with victu-
ales by the
conducte of
a woman.

and could also foreshewe things to come; who, when she came before the king, being apparailed as then after the common sort of other men, because she would not be knownen, is reported to have saluted him as foloweth: “O King, be of good cheere, and feare not, for you shall overcome your enemies, and that by the conduct of me, and shall at the last restore your countrey to thauncient libertie, if that you shall not thinke it unworthie for your kingly maiestie to use the helpe of a woman.” King Charles, who greatly feared his afflicted state, gave credit readily unto her speeche, and conceaved very good hope, as one persuaded that the damosell had receaved some inwarde revelation from God, and the rather because she had saluted him by the name of King, when he was not apparailed as a king. But there was another matter also, which caused his hope: for the damosell demanded a sworde, which, as she saide, was revealed unto her to hange in the church of St. Catherine at Towres, amongst thauncient offeringes there; whereat king Charles mervailing, made searche for the sworde, and, finding it, caused the same to be brought to the damosell, and the rather to make proufe of hir vertue then that he had great confidence of any notable exploit to be atchieved by a woman, he committed to her in charge a bande of souldiers, and part of the victuals, wherewith she might go to relieve the towne. The damosell, so armed, led, as captaine, all that company to Orleance, and whether it were that she deceaved the watch, or that she went invisible by divine power, so it was, that in the dead of the night, she passed through the middest of her enemies into the towne, and brought in the victuals without hurt of her people. In the meane time, the Englishmen, assuring themselves that the citizens were not able long to abide the siege for want of corne, did not presse them so earnestly as before, and were more negligent in their watch; but when they knew that Joane, a damosell, had conveyed in victuall, though they had in contempt the

woman who was become a souldier, yet in great rage, for the relief which was sent, they determined much more sharply to assault thenemy; and therfore the captaines exhorting their souldiers, once at the last, after so great toyle, to receave the fruit of victory, promised great rewarde to them that first should scale the walles. After proclamation wherof, sodenlye they flye from all partes unto the wall, they fill it full, contending both with shott of all sortes, and also with weapons, to expell thenemy from defence thereof, continuing thassault in that order without intermission. Although thenemies were throughly affarde of this newe affray, yet they were not slacke in their owne cause, nor utterly discouraged, for John the bastard signified to king Charles by poste, howe the citie was in great distresse for lacke of corne, and that thenemy was so earnest upon them, as no man's force was able to withstande; wherefore the matter was in such extreme daunger as ear longe it would hardly fall well out; howbeit, to prevent the chaunce thereof, rested in his diligence and ayde. These thinges knownen, king Charles sent with all haste possible both supplye of men and plentie of victuall, which French force was conducted to Orlanece, and incamped welnigh two miles from the towne. From thence they gave intelligence to the damosell at Orlanece of their comming; they admonished and required her to choose out a company of trayned souldiers, to meeete them the next day, and to procure their safe entrance into the towne, which after the Englishmen had permitted them to doo, who supposed it should be for their owne availe to suffer many enter into the towne, wherein famine did reigne alreadie, the Frenchmen all at once issued the day folowing out of the citie thicke and threefolde, and so set upon the next fortresse with might and maine continually, that, after great slaughter on both parties, they tooke and burned the same. Then with greater courage they assault another much bigger. Here, because the force of the defendantes was

well great, the fight was more vehement. The Frenche, who did exceed in number, environing it round about, gave eger assault on every side. The English for defect of fortification, which beganne nowe to be broken, were in distresse every way, and hardly able to holde out, neyther yet the very lorde Talbot, who was not farre off, and helde the thirde fortresse, was able to relieve them in this extremitie of conflict, being afeard, least by his absence that fort also, whereof he was captaine, might be lost; wherefore the English men, pressed a good while with all these difficulties, at the last were driven from their place; and yet araying themselves in forme of a triangle, sodenly they withdrew to the lorde Talbot in the thirde bastile. The lorde Talbot without delaye sallyed foorth against the multitude with a number of souldiers well appoynted, and putting his enemies in great terror he both comforted his owne folkes, delivering them from feare, and repressed thenemy, insomuch as that they retyryd hastily within the walles. The Englishmen made the lesse slaughter, because the bastile, wherein they receaved the first brunt of thassailantes, was not stronge. Not long after, the lorde Talbot called the counsell together, and declared to them very many causes for the which he thought that the siege of a towne so long assaulted, and, as it were, by divine providence defended, was eyther to be utterly forsaken, or to another time to be referred, when as they might with better lucke geve newe attempt, least otherwise they should consume the time wherein; when winter was ended, they might proceede to warres more necessary. This opinion was allowed generally of all men, not so much for liking as for necessitie; and so, upon signe geven to remove, they withdrew to Magdune. Upon whose departure *Magdunum.* those of Orleance were sodenly replenished with all joy and mutuall gladnes, for that they had escaped so great daunger. Wherefore, referring the benefite thereof to God, publique prayer was appoynted for sundry dayes together, they gave prayse to him in all

holy churches, beseeching him of universall victorie. Here truly we may see that he sometimes getteth to litle who coveteth too much. Indeede thenglish men might have overcommed; but esteeming the yeelding of Orleance greatly to their dishonour, if it had been made in other sort than they demaunded, they neglected the victorye, as though it had been theirs alreadie; but afterwarde, they were so farre from gayning of the towne, as that meere necessarie made them desist from their enterprise. But the Frenehe triumphantly rejoysing for the repulse of thenemy, determined in no part to omitt that good oportunitie of dealing in their owne cause, and therefore, forthwith they made rodes through all the territory of Orleancee, to thintent they might recover againe such townes as thenemy held with garrison: First, they went to Jargeaux, and within fewe dayes tooke it, killing there more then two hundred Englishmen, and taking fortie prisoners; howbeit, of their owne retinewe were wanting also three hundred.

But the lorde Talbot, whom we have before mencioned, anone upon his breaking up of the siege of Orleance to have gone to Magdune, after that he had fortified the towne with garrison, marched to Lavalle, where he pight his tentes harde by the wall, and having well viewed the scituacion of the place, with great exhortation to his souldiers, so fiercely assaulted the same, as that three days after his arrivall there he tooke bothe the towne and castle; but the townesmen, whose foward obstinacie was deemed woorthy of smart, he punished severely. The Frenehe men, on thother side, after the recovery of Jargeaux, marched with all their forces, under the conduct of the damosell aforesaide, unto Magdune, and incamped under the wall; which thing once knownen, the lord Talbot, and John Fastolfe, with an armie well appoynted, made haste thither to relieve their frendes; whereof, after that Arthure constable of Fraunce had intelligence by espials, he without more ado, calling to him the damosell, and John duke of Alanson,

The seege
retired
from
Orleance.

Gargeum.

Magdune
taken by
the lo.
Talbot.

marching forward with all force, to stopp their passage, pight his tentes at Patay, a towne unto the which he thought his enemies would repaire, and placed his horsmen in order of battaile before his tentes, to geve charge upon thenemy approching, and to geve the first onset, while thenglish men marched forwarde in their voyage, espying a farre off the cavallery of Fraunce, they suspected some traine to be made for them, which was to be avoyded; wherfore they stay, and commande their footmen to empale themselves round about with stakes, after their accustomed maner; but the cavallery of Fraunce came upon them with so great speede, as having no leysure to put themselves in readines to fight, they were forced to fight a field with horsmen. In this place, when as the conflict had continued more than three houres, thenglish horsmen, oppressed with multitude, were put to flight. But the footmen, having spent almoste all their arrowes, marched forth close togethers, with their swordes drawen, and by helpe of some part of the horsmen, came safe to Magdune. At the first encounter was Great slaughter made of the English, and Jo. lo. Talbot taken. spred abrode through Fraunce that the lorde Talbot was taken, by and by every man had opinion that thenglish partie was the weaker, insomuch that many townes at one instant revolted to the Frenche, for all men generally were ravished with flagrant desire to recover libertie. Then, finally, they hoped for good lucke, then had they confidence that God would deliver from troubles the common wealth of Fraunce, which seemed even now to advaunce it selfe, for as much as God, pleased by prayers, is wont to relieve the afflicted.

When king Charles was advertised of this victory, then, finally, he conceaveed in minde and assured opinion of restitution and libertie, who had been hithertowarde of such noble courage as in Many towns revolted from the Englishe.

his moste adversitie he did never dispaire, wherfore nowe the earle of Salesbury being deade, and the lord Talbot captive, two of the most excellent captaines amongst all his enemies, the magnaminitie of his minde was much increased ; and therefore, to beginne withall, he determined to goe unto Rheins, that winning that towne he might there, according to the maner of his auncestors, be with accustomed ceremony annoynted King, to thintent it might be apparant to all men that even as he called himselfe, so was he in deede, and so to be called, a King, as well by due consecration as by right. And so with a huge armie, under the conduct of the damosell or virgin aforesaide, whom as an oracle he consulted in all his affaires, passing through Champaigne, he marched to Auxer; there, when as he approched, ambassadours came out of the citie to meeet him, promising that they would willinglye obey his commaundementes, so that it might please him to spare them for a few dayes, wherein they might knowe (for duties sake) whether thenglish men would relieve them or not. Charles, because he would not offend the good minde of the citizens towarde him by any unlawfull fact, graunted their desire, and entrenching part of his armie not farre from the citie, garding also the same sufficiently, that the townes men should not beguile him, he conducted the residue thereof unto Troyes. This being the chiefe towne of all Champaigne, he assayed within fewe dayes to besiege, which in the ende was yeelded unto him upon permission of thenglish men who were placed there in garrison to depart. In like maner did those of Chalons, where, placing a garrison, he passed the river of Marne, and besieged Rheins, which he recovered easily ; for the citizens could not well beare thinglish government, and were therefore not willing to abide the siege ; but for that they should not be reported to have betrayed the towne, they opteyned of king Charles libertie for thenglish garrison safely to depart. When king Charles had receaved the towne, he was there annoynted after the use of his

Rheines
revolted
to Kinge
Charles,
and then he
was ther
crowned
Kinge.

auncestors, unto whom the cities of all that faction had sent their chiefe and principall personages, as oratours, who forthwith assembled joyfully to salute him, protesting that they nowe at the last understood Almighty God to have pitie upon the miseries of Fraunce, and to have restored unto them the libertie which they had receaved longe since from their auncestors. Thinhabitantes of Auxer also, after the prefixed day, seeing the Englishmen did send no reskue, submitted themselves to his obeysance.

In the meane time, the duke of Bedford had deep consideration as touching all partes of the realme, and perceaving the taking of the lorde Talbot to be muche hinderance to his affaires, insomuch that certaine cities, voyde of all feare, made no doubt to alienate themselves, and many mo dayly affected to revolte, he to prevente the daunger hereof, determined by all meanes possible to procure king Charles to the fielde, that the event of victory (whiche by Gods helpe he assured himselfe upon) might keepe the people whiche he had yet left in obedience and feare. And so departing from Paris, he marched towardes king Charles, who a litle before was gone from Rhems to Dammartine; and taking certaine principall townes by the way, which he also furnished with men, had made there his abode, meaning to corrupt the Parisians with payment or promise. The duke of Bedford approached, and pitching his campe upon an hill, sent out his horsmen to provoke, stirre upp, and egge thenemy both with weapon and worde to fight. King Charles at that time also had no doubt but he might cope with his enemye in plaine fielde; but when he understande by espialls that the duke was egall unto him, both in number and force, he resolved it better to absteyne, without daunger, then with hazard to joyne battaile, least by temeritie he might interrupt and trouble the prosperous successe of his proceedings. Wherfore some skirmishing there was by the horsmen betweene the two campes, and nothing els. But when king Charles sawe the

earnest desire and livelynes that thenglishmen had to fight, suspecting least by his taryng occasion would fall out that eyther he must fight against his will, or els shamefully to keepe within the trenches, he raysed his campe about midnight, and removed, which thing when it was knownen, very early in the morning, the duke of Bedford could hardly hold back his men from pursuing thenemy; but he stayed them upon great discretion, because he wold doo nothing rashlye. And so dispairing that it was possible to entice king Charles to the fielde, he returned to Paris, purposing to augment his armie, that when as possibilite might be geven afterwardes he might also with greater force assaile him.

Warre prepared
against the
Bohemians by the
bushope of
Rome.

The bus-
hlope of
Winchester,
the Popes
legate, sente
into Ger-
many.

At this very time the Bohemians, who are of a sect different from other Christians, because they obey not the bishop of Rome, partly for defence of their owne heresie, partly (as it chaunceth) moved with envie against other nations, beganne to keepe warre against their neighbours, whereof, after notice was geven to Martine the Vth, bishopp of Rome, he anone sent legates into Ger many, to move the devout and Godly princes unto warres against the Bohemians, as enemies of Christian religion. Also he made Henry cardinall of St. Eusebius and bisshopp of Winchester, legate who should come out of Englande to that warre, with a certaine force of men. He commaunded him withall to levye by his authortie the tenthes of all spiritualties, for the mayntenance of religion. This Henry imparting the Popes commandement to the Kinges councell, and they resolving that nothing was thereunto to be preferred, did levye the money, and gathered no small number of souldiers (although that so sundry impositions were neyther daylye paide, nor so many musters of men made, without great hurt to the common wealth). And so, furnished with all thinges, purposing shortly to journey thorough Germany, he came to the sea shore, and the souldiers beganne to take shippynge, when as the while letters were sent from the duke of Bedforde to the duke of

Gloester, requiring a newe supply of men. The duke of Gloester was greatly troubled with this message; for neyther any other force of men was readie which he might transport, neyther did the time, wherein by reason of the warres against the Bohemians there had been so lately a levye of souldiers, serve at that instant to gather yet againe a newe armie, especially seeing the matter required great haste; who therefore of necessitie made no more adoe, but earnestly requested the bisshop of Winchester that he would first goe with his armie unto the duke of Bedforde, to ayde his owne countrymen in the battaile which the duke of Bedforde was to fight with his enemy; and from thence, having therein good successe, whereof he had no doubt, that he might proceede to the Bohemians. Henry, though he were sory that his journey was hindred, yet because he would not faile his owne nation and frendes, passing thocean, went to Paris to the duke of Bedforde.

The bushe of
Winchester,
being fur-
nished for
his journey
into Ger-
many, was
commanded
to goe
first into
France.

In this meane while king Charles, advertised from his horse-men, whom he had sent abroade all over to feele the mindes of the people, and to move them to revolte, that Campeigne and Beavoys were well affeeted towards him, greatlye coveting to be delivered from the dominion of thenglish nation, and therefore readie to open him their gates at his comming, if that they might so doo without ieopardie of their lives, marched therfore with an armie of light and lustie souldiers to Campeigne: whereof when knowledge was had, the duke of Bedforde, having his forces augmented with the great suplye which IHenry the cardinall had brought, marched also forwarde towardes thenemy, to thintent he might allure him to some indifferent fight, but he was scarce come within the territory of Senlis, when king Charles entered Mountpillioll, which is betwixt Champeigne and Senlis, where getting a covenable place, he encamped his armie, not meaning to conduct his men out of that place upon small occasion. These things were by and by reported by espialls to the duke of

*Siluanec-
tum.
Piliolum.*

Bedford, who, bringing forth his armie into order of battaile, approached nigh to thenemy, and offred battaile: but the French men kept within Mountpellioll; their horsemen skirmished nowe and then a litle without their trenches, but they would assay nothing els: for king Charles considered howe much force fortune, which is to meane the sodaine and unlooked for event of some easuall thing, yea of least moment, is of in battaile, who was therein perfectly taught and instructed by detrimentes before often receaved. Moreover, when he understande that manye and great cities of Fraunce did with evil will suffer the government of thenglish nation, and were readie upon oportunitie to revolt, he hoped, without battaile, to expell thenglish men in short space utterly out of all Fraunce: and this, as he adjudged, was the very cause why the duke of Bedford, as a wise man, not ignorant of his owne decaye, desired so much to trye the whole matter at once in battaile. Wherfore taught therein by experience of the causes aforesaide, he was fully resolved in minde, no where to adventure battaile, but in as much as necessitie should constraine him, and that deemed he would be hereafter most for his profite. The duke of Bedforde, who had the Parisiens in gelousie, because they did all his commaundementes in such sort as might well appere to be against their willes, neyther yet much trusted in the duke of Burgoigne, the cause whereof we shall hereafter declare in convenient place, when he sawe his enemy of purpose to deferre the fight, returned to Paris.

The Cardinal of Winchester departeth out of France into Germany. Then Henry the cardinall legate to the Romane bisshop, with his armie which he had brought before out of Englannde, went forth his voyage against the Boiemians xlvth dayes after that he entred Fraunce: whither when he came, finding the warres all over very hott, he begann valiantly to ayde the christian cause to thuttermost of his power, and taried in Bohemia by the space of certaine monthes, so long, untill that he was revokd by the pope, with other legates; and the cardinall of St. Angell called Julian Soesa-

rine was sent to that warre with great forces. And so the said Henry, after that he had served honorably in that holy warres, returned safe home.

King Charles, after the duke of Bedfordes departure, receaved into his obedience Campeigne, Beauvais, and Senlis, the citizens yeelding thereunto of their owne accord: of which fortunate successe though he much rejoyed, yet he had no hope of habilitie to exterminate the English nation, before he should seperate the society of them and of the Burgoignion, which in the ende he trusted would once come to passe. And therefore he first assayed by often messengers to purge himselfe unto the duke of Burgoigne of his fathers death, and to admonish him, that nothing was further from all righteousnes and pietie, nothing more undecent, then to deale against his comhabitauntes, against his countrey, or for revenge of private iuriies to joyne with their auncient and perpetuall enemies. After that he begann busily to treate of pacification, to offer high and large condicions of agreement, to promise more then he was able to performe, insomuch that the duke of Bedforde did easily understande his whole drifte, wherefore he, much troubled in minde with deepe and weightie considerations, seing the English affaires greatly decaye, determined to provide for one thing especially what adversitie soever should befall, which was to meane, that if all the holdes which king Henry his brother had woonn in Fraunce, could not be retayned, kept, and defended, yet that Normandie, so longe by his auncestors possessed, might not be lost, according as king Henry himselfe, in the last wordes that ever he spake, had commanded to be done. Wherefore committing the government of the citie of Paris to Lewes Lucemburge, bisshopp of Turwne and chauncellor of Fraunce, leaving also for defence thereof no small garrison, he went into Normandie, whither after his comming he called specially unto him the chiefe of every citie, and first rehearsed unto them the benefites bestowed alway by his King Charles laboured to drawe the Duke of Burgoigne on his parti.

The Duke of Bedford
fortefied
Parris and
wente into
Normandy.

auncestours upon the Normans, the restitution of their priviledges and lawes, and also thauncient stocke of the Norman dukes, from whence the kings of England were descended; afterward he exhorted every man by name, that they would with hart and hande be very carefull and earnest to preserve peace, and not to breake their allegiance: this if they would doo, then he assured them they might woorthely hope for at king Henry their kinges hande all that ever they would demaunde. While that the duke of Bedforde is dealing in thaffayres aforesaide, newes was brought unto him that many for feare forsooke both towne and fielde, wherewith being much moved, he calleth togetheris his councell: yea, and addeth thereunto the captaines of every bonde, requiring them to saye their opinions as concerning the keeping of the Normans in obedience. All men generally thought best, that the armie should be devided into severall places: and so was one part assigned to defend the sea coast under the government of Richard duke of York; another part was sent to suplye garrisons in cities and townes; the third part was committed to Edmonde duke of Sommersett, to be conducted unto Roane. The duke of Bedford, thus having ordered his affaires, and severed his forces, himselfe returned to Paris. The meane while that these doinges were in Normandie, Charles the Frenehe king tooke St. Dionise by treason, and did spedily furnish it with garrison: from thence he sent before John duke of Alanson, and the Mayde, that they might marche apace to Paris, and procure the citizens to revolte, yea, and if they sawe cause, to take in hande thassault: who marched forth in square battaile every souldier havynge his buckler, and approaching the wall, was by great slaughter by thenglish garrison repulsed. Whereof the duke of Bedforde hearing, came in great haste to the towne, and with high commendacions, gave thankes to the citizens, for that they followed not theexample of the Dionisians. But king Charles disappoynted of his purpose in that

matter, enterprised another attempt: for he sent Ambrose Delore to Laignie (which is scituate upon the river of Marne) to whom *Latinia-cum.* upon his arrivall the citie was yeelded. Not long after he departed from thence, leaving there a garrison, as in a place wherein, being of it selfe very stronge, he reposeth much trust, and made a voyage into Angeow, at which time thenglish men on thother side wannte againe by force the towne of St. Denis, assaying also to recover Laignie: but the Maide, being therein for succour thereof, made sharpe resistance, and so it was valiantly defended. About the same time certaine companies of English souldiers who rested about Roane, under the conduct of Thomas Tirrell, a valiant gentleman, hearing, as they forrowed abroad, spoyling the countrey, that the towne of Clermont was slenderly manned, assailed the same, and took it at the first brunt. But because they were so fewe, that they might not spare men to fortify the same, therefore first they threwe downe a part of the wall, then sacked the towne, and returned from whence they came loden with great bootie of all kinde. Of another side, the Bourgoignians, under the conduct of John of Lucemburgh, marched to Campeigne with a great force of English men, and environed it with a treuche. But neither the towne, being throughly fortified and strong, was easily to be gayned, neyther the siege like to prove to anye purpose, because that it had been perfectly well victualled before. Howbeit, hoping eyther to winne it by assault, or compell it to yeelde, they undergoe the wall, their army being devided in two, and continually, some with arrowe, dart, and suche like, some with great goonshott, others by making mines, and others with other almost perpetuall fight molest the towne, laboring to that ende chiefly that the same might quickly yeelde, when as loe sodainly Joane the maide, the prophetisse of God, as the common sort termed her, though ignorant of her owne fate, came to relieve them, and mightyly entred the towne: but soone after when as she sallied out unadvisedly against Joane captaine of the Frenche taken by Jo. of Luxemburgh.

thenemy, she was taken by John of Lucembrowgh, and sent to the duke of Sommersett at Roane. •

*Joane the
captayne of
the Frenche
was burnt.* This maide, forasmuch as she did many notable exploites above the force of a woman, and in a maner without any skill of martiall discipline, was suspected of the common sorte to deale by witchcrafte: wherefore, accused of sorcerie, she was firste straitly examined by the duke of Sommersets commaundement, as toweling the articles of her fayth: afterwarde, because she ware mans apparell, and was verely accompted a witche, therefore was she with severitie condemned and burnt. But the unhappy Maide, remebering, before execution done, what apperteyned to humanitie, which naturally is bredd in every one, fained herselfe to be with childe, to thende she might eyther move her enemies to compassion, eyther els cause them to appoyn特 some more milde punishment. But after being reserved ix. monthes for that cause, and her surmise founde false, she was burned notwithstanding. This saide sentence thus pronounced was thought the hardest that ever had beene remembred, which could neyther be mollified nor mitigated by tract of time. Surely it was of some thought that this woman thus excited to martiall manly prowesse, for defence of her country, was worthy favour, especially seeing there were many examples of mercie showed in such case, as that principally which Porsenna King of the Trurions hath left in memorie. For when as he, upon conclusion of peace with the Romanes, had receaved pledges, and amongst them Cloelia a virgin, who, conducting a company of others like, beguiled the watch, and amongst the middest of her enemies swam over Tiber and fledd to her owne people, notwithstanding that afterwarde she was by the league redelivered, yet he did not punish her, but with great commendation gave her part of the pledges, and sent her home againe. But I will retурне to the matter.

This was the ende of Joane Puselle, more fitt, as the brute went,

to practise magike than martiall affaires. But the Frenche men to this day will not heare but that she was sent of God from heaven to expell thenemy out of their countrey ; for they affirme -that she dyed a virgin. After her fall the Frenche failed not in courage, who both with continuall sallyinges out of the towne, and also with ofte bickering in plaine fielde, so annoyed their enemies, that, dispeyring to winne the same, they departed of their owne accord.

The affaires of England grewe by this meane, from day to day, through Fraunce, woorse and woorse, which did diversly affect the nobilitie : for some, very pensife in mind, deemed the distresse of the present time light, in comparison of that which they forswere to be imminent : others thought that woorse could not chaunce than had alreadie chaunced, for they sawe the forces of thenemy augmented and their owne diminished : wherefore every man, much musing with ardent affection, considered with himselfe particularly whether it were possible to remedie the state of thinges almost utterly decayed : when as in the end it was resolved, generally, to be best for the present neede that king Henry should repaire, as soone as conveniently might be, with a newe arnie into Fraunce, partly to comfort his owne people, partly to keepe under and in obedience the cankred courage of Frenche men, eyther for feare, eyther els for favor, seing the yonge king was of so amiable and lovely countenaunce. Wherefore men were mustered sufficient for such a voyage, and money was levyyed by an imposition or taske, sett as well upon the clergie as laitie, for to support the charge thereof ; and so king Henry, under the tuition of Henry H. 6, re-
the cardinall, transporting out of Englande came first to Roane, paired the
and from thence to Paris. All the whole citie came forth to meeete cardinal of
him, and with all fortunate signes and shewes of joy and gladnes Winchester
they saluted him as King, an impe of most excellent towardnes and into
disposition, though many perchaunce there were, who did all that France.

honor with holowe heartes ; but so it was to thoutwarde apperaunce, that that day of the kinges arrivall was there celebrated of all men generally with great rejoysing, for the whiche an oration was openly made in prayse of the people, and great plentie of money, corne, and wine was bestowed upon them. After that, the duke of Bedford, assembling the nobilitie, is reported to have saide : “ Beholde, my lordes, the course of humane causes ; Henry the Vth was to have been your King, as well by right as by league, but he deceassing, in a manner before his full and perfect age, hath lefte a sonne to succeede and enjoye his grandfathers kingdom ; he is here amongst us : hither is he brought for that cause, that he may be proclaymed your King, and that both he may knowe his Frenche people, and they likewise him, who are wont principally among all other nations to esteeme, honor, and both faithfully and also carefully obey their King (if I may so say) in the very steede and place of God. And though some there be who take part with Charles, yet the cause thereof appereth to be error and not disloyaltie ; wherefore, whosoever will returne and acknowledge his dutie, shalbe pardoned. Therefore it onely resteth that you will with all loyaltie, as you have hithertowardes diligently done, endeavour your selves from henceforth to keepe and conserve the people in obedience, whose dutifulnes in this behalfe shall so well deserve of your King, as that his maiestie will not denay you anything that shalbe for your utilitie and honour ; whose thankfull bountifulnes of minde towardes you hereafter you may measure unto your selves according to the rate and proportion of your owne simple and well affected consciences towardes his highnes.” Thassemble dissolved, king Henry, being of thage of tenne yeres, was consecrated by Henry the cardinall in the church of our lady mother of God, and the crowne set upon his head, with all due and accustomed ceremonie. After celebration of the divine misterie, the Frenche noble men sware homage to king Henry ;

The duke
of Bed-
fords ora-
tione.

H. 6.
crownede
at Parrys,
anno 1432.

after that proclamation was made, that all men should be pardoned who would within a certaine time returne into thobedience of king Henry. This was the yere of our salvation 1432.

While these thinges were a doing at Paris, king Charles recovered, partly by force, and partly by treason, the townes of Melun, Corbole, and sundry others; but otherwhere the event of *Meledum num. Corbolium.* things was otherwise. There was a great garrison of Frenche at *Equites.* Beauvoys, whom Thomas earle of Arundell thought by pollicie to allure into the field: wherefore pighting his tentes afarre off, he layde both footmen and horsemen nigh the towne in a secrete and privie place; after that he sent out some light horsemen, that might provoke thenemy to issue, which horsemen executing his commaundementes, proceeded even to the gates; where finding Frenchmen ready to pursue them, they counterfaited flight, drawing the pursuers within daunger of thambush, who were so intrapped and killed downe right, together with the townesmen, who also folowed the chase, whereof part, hearing the great stirre and noyse of horses, conceavead the traine, and hardlye recovered the towne, the residue were slaine. The number of them who were killed is not mentioned of any author, so far as I knowe, which surely is thought to have beene not small. Also, Richard earle of Warwicke had like fortunate successe about the saide time in a conflict with his enemies at Gorney, where many were killed, and three score *gentlemen* taken. The like force of frowning fortune did Rhenate duke of Barry feele about the same time, who by meane of his puissance had greatly ayded king Charles: for Rhenate, who had an old grudge against Anthony earle of Vaudemont, had gathered togethers great forces, and marched withall to surprise the towne of Vaudemont: of whose approche when the Earle hearde, fearing to be compassed about of his enemy, he lefte the retinewe of souldiers which he had, to furnish the towne, and fledd in poste to the dukes of Bedforde and Burgoigne, whose

part he tooke, requiring them of ayde: and having obteyned the same, he and Anthonye Tolongone, lieutenant of Burgundie, returned againe with a mayne hoste to relieve his people, sharply urged by his enemy. Which when Rhenate understoode, fearing least as soone as the citizens should perceave their duke with succours to approche, that both they should issue out of the towne, and the duke set upon them behinde all at one time; he therefore, forsaking the siege, turned his forces against thenemmes that were comming, and commaunded his men to geve the charge. The fight was mainteyned a while amongst the horsemen, who received the first brunt, untill the footmen drewe neere, who entred the battaile with such might and mayne, as that the Frenche was not onely unnable to abide, but were put to flight forthwith. Rhenate was taken with three hundred of his souldiers. There was killed about three thousande. The English had about the same time no lesse oportunitie offered to have atchived a prosperous adventure in another quarter also, if they had not unwisely omitted the same: for Robert lorde Willoughby, and Mathew Gough, a valiant Walshman, besieged the castle of St. Selerine, by nature of the place very strong, and pressed to take the same by force: on thother side, the garrison within did lustely defende the place, whereof king Charles being advertised, sent to succour his people, in all haste, Ambrose Delore, with divers other captaines. He, because himselfe was captaine thereof, and that the garrison who defended the same were of his placing, as one earnest to ayde his owne, at the first set speedily forward, but soone after doubting to be compassed about, he stayed at Beau monte, minding there to tarie while the residue of captaines appoynted should come thither also, that from thence they might altogether proceede against thenemy: but the while of this assemblie, the English men that were at the siege having intelligence by espialls what their enemies did, determined to encounter

Reynat
duke of
Barry
taken.

Belli-
monle.

them before thone partie should joyne with thother : and therefore the better part of the campe issuing without any noyse in the deade of the night, founde their enemies campe so evil garded, that about a thousand men were within the trenched or ever any man almost perceaved ; but the slaughter in the very trench made awaked thenemy, who, not suspecting the chaunce, were sodenly striken in such terror and trouble of minde, that no man did effectually assaye to take armour, or to make resistance : but when the day appered thenglish soldiers, seeking after spoyle, did not pursue the chase, but were satisfied with so huge bootie, and busied to cary away the same, whereby beholde it chaunced that the Frenche men who were in marching thitherwarde, hearing the clamour of fighting men, hastened themselves, came upon their enemies unwares, and set couragiously uppon them all laden with spoyle. The residue also of them who fledd, made head againe and returned. The fray was fierce and cruell of both sides, and longe continued in equall balance ; but in thende thenglish men, oppressed with multitude, gave grounde. Divers of them were taken, and amongst them Mathew Gough. Many Frenche men were killed, but mo taken, in the number of whom was Ambrose Delore. After that Robert L. Willoughby lefte the siege. Surely a chiefe captaine in warres ought to regard the victory, and nothing els, which is so harde to be gotten, and so easily lost, as that he who supposeth him selfe to have it in his hande, may alwaye be deceaved, and bring himselfe in daunger, before he holde it fast : or whoso hath it may easily with losse foregoe it againe, except he have speciall care of keeping thereof : for example, thenglish men, while as conquerours they sought for spoyle, loste the victorie alreadie gotten.

But while these two nations of Englande and Fraunce doo thus fight for superioritic, for soveraintie, yea, for safetie of life itselfe, by reason of such lowse libertie as warres gave throughout the

Mathewe
Gough
takene
prisoner.

whole French region, all men were berefte of their riches, holy treasures were spoyled, Christian blood by slaughter or wounding was every where shed, the commonaltie cruelly tormented and punished, matrones were defiled, virgins were rested out of their parentes armes and ravished, townes were taken every day, dayly were they sacked, and the townesmen transported otherwhere, houses and whole streetes were burnt, and finally, no kinde of crueltie could be devised, wherewith the poore Frenche man was not afflicted ; I omitt an innumerable kinde of other calamities, wherewithall they were all at once oppressed. To thincrease of all these mischieves, the common wealth during this time was forced to lye without lawe, (which for the most part is silent in warres,) without all civil government, and justice. Neyther was England exempt cleere from such injuries, for they sawe dayly the death, slaughter, and woundes of their felowes and frendes ; their substance was exhaust with continual exactions ; so that the mischieves were mutuall and common to both sides ; the whole occident did ringe with their outeries, the fame of their doleful state was spred through the whole earth, wherefore there was no man living who wondred not with compassion howe these two nations should be able to abide so long charge and affliction : but chiefly of all other, Eugenius the fourth, bisshop of Rome, tooke pitie hereof, who, very desirous to devise some meane whereby this outragious warre might once have ende, sent Nicholas cardinall of the Holy Crosse into Fraunce to make attoneinent betwixt the two kinges. He, after his comming thither, went first to king Charles, and explained to him his commission from the Pope : from thence he did the like to the duke of Bedforde : he persuaded peace, shewed by demonstration, declared, and by argument well proved the same to be more apperteyning to the dutie of Christian princes then warre, who ought to applye all their travaile for the profite of their people, to mainteyne justice, to rule themselves by reason,

The Bishop
of Rome
sent his
legate to
treate of
a peace.

alway to remitt somewhat of their rage, to put up part injurie, which things warres would not permitt them to doo. The cardinall endevouring to perswade the two princes to be of this minde, they both gave aunswere, that they were readie to yeelde to all reason. But when the matter was dealt in, they were so farre from agreeing to any indifferent conditions of peace, as that they remayned more obstinate in their error; which thing when the cardinal coneeaved, dispairing to conelude a perpetuall peace, yet because it should not be thought that he had taken all that travaile in vaine, he concluded a truce for six yeres: whereunto as either partie was hardly drawnen at the cardinals request, so after his departure they sodenly brake. Some late writers have mentioned, that the Frenche did first violate the same, who every where set sore impositions and punishmentes by purse uppon such as were frendes to the English or Burgoinion; whereby it came to passe that the malice of their mindes mutually inflamed, the warres beganne againe more sharplye then before; that was the yere of our salvation 1433.

1433.

But I will returne againe to king Henry. King Henry, within a fewe dayes after he had bene adorned at Paris with the maiestie of the regall diademe, departed to Roane: where while he tarieth Henry the cardinal was revoked againe into Englannde, for pacifying an uprore of certaine moste wicked persons, who, under pretence of embrewing the mindes of men with a newe religion, had conspired to disturbe the quiet government and tranquillitie of the realme. The Cardinall conferred with the duke of Gloucester as concerning the state of forreine causes beyonde the sea, and assured him, that, as he thought, the Frenche men would shortly breake the trewce, and therefore, that it were meete to make in readines a supply of men and money necessary for the use of warre, which when the duke of Gloucester understoode, he called a parliament, by decree whereof men were mustered, and money ex-

A truse
agreed upon
betweene
England
and France
for 6 years.

A parlia-
ment so-
moned by

which
men and
moneye
were de-
creed to be
prepared
and a peace
concluded
with Scot-
land.

acted. During this season, James, king of Scotts sent ambassadours to the duke of Glocester as concerning peace. But because the king was absent, the duke referred that demaunde to the parliament, whereupon, after long debating of the matter, peace was granted, because there was good hope of the continuance thereof, insomuch as the Scottish king was troubled with intestine division, and that there was a trewee taken betwene Englande and Fraunce for sixe yeres. The parliament being dissolved, the Cardinall, with the forces that were gathered, and great store of money that was levyed, returned to the king at Roane. Thither came also the duke of Bedford from Paris to consult what best was to be done. Here the whole matter was referred to councell. Some suspected, that the Frenche men would not keepe and sticke to the condition and covenants of peace, forasmuch as it was apparent, that they almost all generally were inwardlye incensed with grieve, that Normandie and Paris, and so many goodly townes, were reduced under thenglish empire, and therefore were earnest to persuade that nothing might be remitted pertayning to the warre, least, upon sodaine breache of trewee, they might be compelled with extreme hazarde to take sodaine advise in most weightie causes, all unreadie, both lacking men and money. Againe, this many did affirme, that it was not possible to continue the warre in that order, during so long time of trewee taken, without breache thereof, seing it was a very harde matter to restraine the souldiers hande from evill doing, who should continue dayly in armes for feare of the enemy, and therefore they thought good to fortifie places of most importance with garrison, and to sende the rest of tharmie home againe, during continuance of the trewee. After the matter was thus argued both wayes, the dukes of Bedford, Somersett, and Yorke, allowing upon the former opinion, determined that all thinges expedient for warres should be prepared, that the souldiers should be payde their wages, and that a greater armie shoulde be gathered against all adventures.

Such resolution being made, king Henry returned first to Calis, and from thence into Englande. The duke of Bedforde accom-
panied the king to Callis, and there made his abode a fewe dayes ; when as the while sundrye souldiers, remembryng their accustomed
martiall libertie, begann to make ravine and spoyle every where, which after that he knewe, having gotten this litle occasion to mi-
nister justice, he caused to be apprehended the authours of this
wicked attempt, and punished them with great severitie, thereby
to terrifie others, that they might the rather refraine from other
mens goodes. And so the duke of Bedforde having delivered the
towne of most pernitious people, fortified the same with newe
supplye, and so journeyed to Paris, when as in the mean time
another matter came in his head : for a fewe monthes before he
had forgone Anne, his wife, sister to the duke of Burgoigne, by
reason of whose death it fell out that the Burgoignians affection
was after more easily alienated from the amitie of the Englishe
nation, who, as we have before touched, was moved earnestly
thereto for other causes ; wherefore he determined to mary Jaquet,
daughter to Peter of Lucembrowgh, Earle of St. Paule, a very noble
man ; by reason of which newe affinitie thauncient acquaintance
and familiaritie betwixt him and that noble house might be con-
firmed by more straite and sure bonde of benevolence. And so
departing from Callis, he rode towarde Tirwine, where the earles
house was, whom the earle interteyned very joyfully, and gave to
him in mariage his daughter Jaquet, which was the thing that he
demaunded. And so the duke of Bedford having his desire, after
most sumptuous and honorable solemnization of mariage, came
with his wife to Paris. The duke of Burgoigne took that in evill
part, who, being minded to joyne with king Charles, was sory that
the duke of Bedforde shoulde nowe be strengthened by affinitie
of the auncient and mightie house of Lucembrowghe, which might
stande him in great steede every where. About the same time,

H. G. re-
turne the
into Eng-
land.

The duke
of Bedforde
maried the
E. of St.
Paule his
daughter.

John Talbot ran-somed.

John Talbot, whom we before shewed to have been taken of the Frenche men, at Patay, was raunsomed for a great somme of money, and the restitution to libertie of Ambrose Delore, taken also a fewe monthes before, and so suffered to depart from thenemy, returned into Englande.

While these things were done thus in other places, the Frenche souldiers lacking paye, and having amongst them an heape of un-thriftes, whom hope of spoyle and delight of warre had withdrawen from husbandrie, and all other dayly exercise of good occupation, begonne first to take prisoners, sometime English men, sometime Burgoignions, as occasion served, and to raunsome them according to their substance : which though it were more unlawful during the truce, yet they feared not to proceede with suche enterprise afterwarde openlye, by reason of which injurye the English men were forced to take weapon in hande againe anone, after sixe monthes next ensewing the making of the trewee, and by this meane was the warre renewed, which the most part generally supposed and much desired to have been ended, or for longer time stayde. But the Frenche trewee breakers without delay armed themselves, and

St. Valery
lost to the
Frenche.

tooke the towne of St. Valery, scituate in the mouth of the river Some, upon the frontires of Normandie. Another company, under the conduct of Ambrose Delore, made rodes about the same time

Latinia-cum.
into the territory of Cane. On thother partie, thenglish men under the duke of Bedforde besciged with great force the towne of Laigney, standing, as we have before shewed, upon the river of Marne, litle in deede, but environed with mighty trenches and deepe ditches, which for because they could not winne at the first assault, they intrenched themselves, and having wonne the bridge, they builded thereupon a towre for defence thereof, and layde to battery on all sides. Againe, the towne manfully defended themselves, yea, and sometime, by conduct of John the bastard of Orleance, who was captaine thereof, they sallyed out, but not without

their owne slaughter. There lay thinglisch campe certaine dayes, fighting in this order, when as the duke of Bedforde, forced by matter of more great importance, was withdrawn otherwise: who leaving the siege, returned to Paris, least the citizens who were perversely affected might take occasion by his absence to worke some practise the while against him. Anone after his arrivall there, without any tary, he sent Peter of Lucenbrowghe, his father in lawe earle of St. Paule, and Robert lorde Willoughbie, to recover the towne of St. Valery. They, forasmuche as all mens mindes were inflamed with desire of revenge, marched thither speedily, besieged the towne, and buckled to thassault. The Frenche who were within, after a fewe dayes spent in making resistance, hopelesse finally of any ayde to releeve them, yeeded the towne upon composition safely to depart from thence. Peter of Lucenbrowghe and the lorde Willoughbie, leaving sufficient garrison, returned to the duke of Bedforde conquerours of that exploite; but the towne, whether it were by contagion of corrupt ayre, or els by reason of old unholesome vyande wherewithall the souldier was feedd, beganne to be sore infected with pestilence, to thintent (as I beleeve) that thinfortunate towne, after so manye overthrowes and miseries as they had nowe twise suffered, firste during the siege of the Frenche, and than that of thinglisch people, might be plagued also with that deadlye disease. Moreover, a litle before, the Frenche men had invaded the boundes of Burgundie also, taking certaine townes and towres, and some thereof rasing to the very grounde. And while that the Burgoignians labour to recover the same, the duke of Bedforde sent the lorde Willoughbie and Thomas Tirrell, with certaine bandes, to make helpe speedily unto their frendes. They setting forwarde in all haste, after that they were entred the territorie of Laonoys, mett by chaunce with a mayne hoste of enemies, *Laudu-*
nense. and encoutring therewithall, put them to flight, whereof they killed elx, and tooke some, whom they killed afterwarde. Theng-

lishe men after this proceeded on their purposed journey, and joyned with the Burgoignions, who, their forces thus united, recovered quickly all the saide places.

The lo.
Talbott re-
turnes out
of England
into France
with a great
army.

In this meane time, the lord Talbot having mustered a number of able men in Englande, transported into Fraunce with a great armie, and arrived at Roane, where, after he had refreshed his souldiers, he went from thence unto Paris to the duke of Bedforde, whose arrivall, a wonder is to speake, how much it encouraged his owne frendes, and appalled his enemies: for he was accompted an especiall good captaine in the warres, and his approved pollitique government there was woorthely fearfull to the Frenche, and to his owne nation full of assured hope and confidencie.

Beau-
monte is
beseged by
the lo. Tal-
bott.

St. Selle-
reene is
surprised
by the E.
of Arun-
dell.

Silly is
takene by
the E. of
Arundelle.

This lorde Talbot, after he was direeted by the duke of Bedforde as touching his proeceedings and enterprises, marched forward with an hoste well appointed to besiege the towne of Beaumont, which at the first push he wanne by assault; he subdued also the holdes adjoyning with like successe. Amongst these matters the earle of Arundell beseged the castle of St. Selerine, whereof he was conqueror three monthes after that he had laide siege therunto, killing the garrison that was therein. From thence he came before the towne of Silly, the citizens whereof, being in terror by reason of the slaughter lately made at St. Selerines, gave pledges by and by upon promise to deliver the towne within thirtie dayes, except they should be reskewed the meane while by king Charles, and sent forthwith certaine men to king Charles, who, advertised thereof, commaunded Arthure, with certaine ensignes, to goe forthwith to succor the Sylyens. After they did once appere, therle of Arundell rendred to the towne their pledges, and offered the Frenche men battaile in a fitt place for the same not farre from his tentes, which he had chosen out a litle before thaproche of thenemye. Arthure, though he were willing to fight, yet perceaving the Englishmen to have taken such grounde as was not meete for his multi-

tude, would not aduaunce forth against them, but the night following, having releaved the towne with part victuall and part garrison, returned from whence he came. After his departure, the earle of Arundell wanne the towne by force, and departed into Normandie spoyleyng the countrey all the way as he went, and subduing divers castles of Mayne and Angeow. Thither also repaired the lorde Willoughbie, and Thomas Tirell out of Burgundie, conquerours, as we have before remembred, who tooke by the way a very stronge towne called Louviers, and furnished it with garrison.

*Louverium.
Louviers
taken
by the E.
of Arun-
delle.*

*The Nor-
manes rise
inrebellyon
against
H. G.*

About this time, a huge rowte of rurall Normans, inhabiting upon the sea coast, whether they were thereunto labored by the Frenche men, or that they were desirous of alteration, which the common sorte of people greedily gapeth after, armed themselves, expelled garrisons by force, and tooke certaine holdes, crying out every where, to persecute onely the Englishmen. Hereupon truely may we conceave, that it is more possible for thethiop to chaunge his colour, as the common saying is, then for them who inhabite Fraunce to beare great good will to thenglish nation: for indeede the Normans were subject long to the King of Englande, and well interteyned, who nowe forgetting dutie, but no poynt of envye, were not afraed to ryse against their chiefe lorde and soveraine. This multitude thus stirred up, tooke their way first towarde Cane, that there, increasing in number, they might consult upon the body of the matter. In which meane while the dukes of Soomerset and Yorke, hearing of such uprore of commons, and advised of their proceedinges, sent against them without delay the earle of Arundell and lorde Willoughbie, with six thousand archers, and a thousand three hundred light horsmen, to let and stopp their passage by all meane possible, so that they might not be able eyther to runne and range abrode, neyther yet to goe forwarde. The earle of Arundell, diverting somewhat out of the way,

The Normans yield and submit themselves.

premised the lorde Willoughbie with part of the horsmen and two thousande footmen, to lye in ambushe some where nigh the way, to intrapp the multitude approching ; he, as he was commaunded, so placed himselfe secretly, and advertised the earle of the place where the ambush was layde, whereby he might understande when to geve the signe of invading, which when the earle of Arundell knewe, he folowed the rowt behinde, as one driving a hearde of deare into nettes, and after that he perceaved the retchlesse multitude draw nigh to thambush he made a signe incontinent, whereupon the lord Willoughbie gave charge on them before and himselfe behinde, all at once ; with which sodaine accident the ruralls, all agast, helde up their handes, and casting away both weapon and armor, prayed to spare their lives ; with whose piteous prayers, the earle of Arundell, moved to compassion, caused the souldiers to cease from bloudshed, and taking them specially whom he supposed to have been practisers of that comotion, suffered the residue to depart safe home ; but yet there was a thousand men killed even at the first encounter, before the souldiers could be reduced againe unto their ensignes. So this stirre appeased, and so great rage by good rule and government forthwith restrained, there were strait inquisitions thereof made, and all that were giltie were condemned and put to death. In the meane time, the Frenche men, under the conduct of Peter of Rokeforde, tooke from thenemy Diep and some other townes of small strength. But the earle of Arundell, after so many notable and honorable exploites, not longe after assayed one other, which was his last attempt that ever he made. The castle of Gerbory, in Beauvois, was scituate upon a place of great strength, but whether it were by force of man, or by antiquitie of time, it was nowe almost levell with the grounde. Because this place stooode very aptly to expell the sodaine incursion of thenemy, king Charles had geven Stephen Hyre in charge to repaire the saide castle, which when the

Deepe and
some other
townes lost
to the
Frenche.

earle of Arundell understoode, by and by he came out of Normandy into Beauvoys with too slender force of men to interrupt and let the building thereof. The Frenche men stirred with the sodaine approche of thenemy, left the place to the workmen, and arming themselves in haste issued forth. They gave a sore charge upon the English men approching, who abode and bare it out a while; but when the earle of Arundell fell from his horse sore wounded, then casting themselves in a triangle, and omitting somewhat the fight, they were forced to retire. The earle of Arundell, thus wounded, dyed not long after, a man of singular virtue, constancie, and gravitie, whose death in so tempestuous tormoiles exceedinglye appalled the courage of his nation. But the Frenche men, after the departure of thenemy, made an ende of the worke which they had begonne. The death of Thomas earle of Arundell chaunced in the year of our salvation 1434, and the twelfth yere of king Henries reigne.

The E. of
Arundell
wounded to
death and
died in
Beauvoys.

1434, the
12 of H. 6.

The very selfsame yere the towne of St. Denis was twise taken, once of the Frenche men by treason, and againe of thenglish by yeelding. Also Corbelle, Vicens, and Meulane were brought under the subjection of Fraunce; for townes which for the most part were voyde of walles laye so open to the spoyle, that thinhabitantes, who were able to performe nothing by constant obedience, did alway ycelde to the first assailants, as ofte as the garrisons there placed would permitt them so to doo, least they should otherwise suffer thextemitie. Whereby it came to passe that nothing was fuller of troubles than Fraunce, nothing more subject to spoyle, nothing more beggerly. Neyther was the souldier in much better ease, who, though he were gladd of spoyle, yet was he killed every where, during the while that eyther King laboured to keepe the chiefe cities of his faction in obedience. Wherefore, the people of eyther partie began now to wery with bloudshed; now was so many discommodities done, by both sides, that every

twise
taken.
Vicensias.

man generally did lament himselfe to be thus oppressed, tormented, and utterly destroyed; every man was vexed with most deepe dolor, every man afflicted and muche broken with sorrowe; wherefore those who were of most perverse and obstinate disposition were thereby inclined to peace. Hereunto also they were urged by want of all things; for the fieldes lay every where wasted and untilled, the principall cause whereof was, because men were compelled for savegarde of life not to ere the grounde, but of necessitie to serve in warres. And so, constrained thereto by manyfolde mischifes, neyther partie was unwilling of peace; but thone thought it dishonorable eyther to demaunde it of thother, or yet to yeelde thereunto. Wherefore it was needfull that Eugenius the pope should be the author and arbiter of so great an attonement, who finally might by his authoritie, counsell, and perswasion, wrest out the wepons from the handes of these most invincible conquerours, and of other warriers who never would cause sounde the retrait, never would heare of abstinence; which saide Bisshop was broughte in good hope of pacification, especially for because the fame was, that Phillip duke of Burgoigne grewe wary of that he had done; for he at the beginning, desirous as well to revenge his fathers death as to mainteyne his owne preheminence and dignitie, shewed to the English nation all the frendshipp he could, not supposing that he should, by reason of this league with the king of Englande, be constrained to offend against the common wealth, which he ruled as then at his owne direction and pleasure, neyther that he should depart from that preheminence, so longe as he should agree with Englande; but when it fell out afterwarde otherwise then he had weened, forasmuch as the king of Englande used nowe the government by right of inheritance, and challenged all sutes, lawes, peace, and warres, to be in his power, whereof the duke had had a litle before good experiance, when in the treatie for geving up of Orleance

the same was denyed to be yeelded in his name; then lastly he determined to returne into the way from which he had strayed, and both to stand and holde with his owne nation, as soone as he might have any honest pretence so to doo, whereby he should not be reported to intangle himselfe with newe perillous practises, nor to contribute any such against thenglish people. Wherfore Eugenius, the Romane Bisshopp, having intelligence that all men were thus generally affected, made as it were an assured accompt of peace, and sent as soone as might be Nicholas the cardinall againe into Fraunce, who anon upon his comming thither, appoynted the meeting to be at the towne of Arras, whither came *Ad urbem Atrebatium.* ambassadours from king Henry; Henry cardinal of Winchester, and Henry archbisshopp of Yorke, William earle of Suffolke, and John earle of Huntington, as chiefe in commission concerning *A treatye at Arras.* that treatie. Also the French ambassadours; the archbisshop of Rhemes, the duke of Burbon, Arthure earle of Richmonde, and divers other gentlemen of woorthi shipp. The Burgoignion also sent his ambassadours; the bisshops of Liege, Cambray, and Arras, with many other woorthie personnages of honorable estimation. In this great assemble, after muche reasoning, Nicholas the cardinall, a man of an approved judgement, was made by all their consentes umpire in the cause. He againe required every mans opinion, to thende he might judge uprightly. The English ambassadours demanded that the Frenche king might be declared to holde of the king of England. Againe, the Frenche of thother faction would have the kingdome of Fraunce free, and not to holde of any other. Nicholas, esteeming it no time then to geve judgement as concerning the title and right of the crowne of Fraunce, proponed openly suche lawes of league as for the present state of thinges he adjudged indifferent for both parties. But both parties refused them. And so, without any conclusion in the matter they came for, thassemblie departed. But thereby grewe that the Bur-

goignions and Frenchemen begonne to treate of trewee, and to talke of peace betwixt them twaine; which Phillip himselfe, duke of Burgoigne, had, for many causes before mencioned, desired in his heart longe before. And so peace was concluded upon these maner of condicions: that king Charles should depart from, unto the duke of Burgoigne, the townes of Amiens, Corbie, Perone, St. Quintimes, Abbevile, and the counties of Artois, Pontieu, and Bullonnoys, besides sundry other places adjoynning upon Burgundie, which had been of the dominion of his auncestours. Many other thinges promised the Frenche king, which he could not afterward performe; for he durst not denye the Burgoignion any his demaundes, as one who thought himselfe forthwith fortunate if with such an adversary he might be able to conclude a peace, though not honorable, and as he would desire, yet necessary, and in respect of the present state very commodious, which was to his great advaantage after, as he concaveed even then that it would prove. Moreover, when as they chauned to meeete within fewe dayes after, it is reported that king Charles did salute the duke in this sort: ‘I wish you good fortune also, nowe finally at the last I finde myselfe voyde of feare, and delivered from great cares, for that you, the mightiest prince in Fraunce, next to the king, and of all other men in that nation best accompted, are returned againe to your countrey, according to our desire; for this saying of the Gospell was fixed ever in my minde: Every kingdome devided against it selfe shalbe destroyed. O Lorde, howe much was I affearde, least that should have happened by our dissension. But nowe the matter is safe, when you will joyne with me in carefullnes to repell thenglish men, our common enemies, with all diligencie out of Fraunce, and that care you will have, as I trust. Assure yourselfe I am readie to shewe you any honorable pleasure that I can.’ Hereunto the Burgoignion aunswere, that he would indevor himselfe not to fayl of his dutie in any poynt.

Perona.

Bononi.

When the league was made, the Burgoignion made more haste of nothing then speedily to dispatche ambassadours to king Henry into Englande, to let him understand that he was very wery with that longe warres, and the dayly complaintes of his subjectes, which from day to day receaved greater and greater damage of the Frenche, who lamented and openly complained, that he was the onely man who receeved, enforced, and armed the English nation against his owne countrey, and that was more carefull to retayne them in the lande of Fraunce, then to restore king Charles, his cousin of bloud. Finally, that he was constrained to make peace with king Charles ; and, forasmuch as king Charles offered very indifferent and honorable conditions of peace, therefore he willed them to exhort king Henry in his name to agree to that league. But indeede the Burgoignon, whose owne conscience accused him of woorthie and notable reproche, sent that ambassage, rather to avoyde blame, to thende that thereby he might wipe away the note of that fowle fact, because he was reported tretcherously and traiterously to have revolted from thamtie of Englande, then that he desired greatly in heart any good to thenglish affaires : when thambassage was hearde, all men there present were so kindled with the shamefulnes of such dealing, as that they could not holde in their anger, nor moderate themselves therein, nor yet refraine from speech, but called the Burgonion a traitor, a false and craftie man. But after that this breache of league and fidelitie was bruted abrode, they proceeded from brawling to blowes ; for the commonaltie, stirred together by reason of this unthankfull message, beganne so farre forth furiously to invade all kinde of Flemminges then being in London, as that many were wounded, many killed, before the multitude could, by open proclamation, be appeased. The kinges gratiouse goodnes was willing that his subjectes should refraine from shedding of innocent bloud, and himselfe the meane while aunswere thambassadours, that they should admonish the

The duke of Burgundie sent ambas-
sadors to H. 6. to treate of peace be-
tween H. 6. & the kinge of Fraunce.

A great tumult raised in London against the Flemings for the fashod of the duke of Burgundie.

H. 6. his answer to the Burgoyne ambassa-
dores.

duke from him, not to become enemy to thenglish people without cause, but rather with reverence to continue olde amitie, which better was then newe warres, and that he should not be so unadvised as to chaunge certainties for uncertainties; therfore he would wish him take good heede, least otherwise he should intermingle the florishing state of his dominions with the causes of king Charles almost desperate, and so should rashly revolt from prosperitie to adversitie. With this aunswere thambassadours were dismissed; but in the meane time king Henry determined to make the duke some such busines, as that entangled therewithall he shoulde the lesse be able with his forces to ayde the Frenche king. And therfore he sent forthwith secret messengers into Flaunders, to stirre up with money the heades men of cities to innovations, whereunto they were wont of their owne naturall disposition to be much inclined. The messengers did their devoir, and, for olde acquaintance sake, first assayed the Gantays, but they nothing prevailed, for those people sawe apparently that the forreine affayres of England would dayly decay. These thinges were done in the yere of our salvation 1435, which yere was famous by the death of John duke of Bedforde, an exceeding good man in time of peace, and in warres most valiant, who dyed of sicknes at Paris in the woorst time that could be for the common wealth. His corps was earied to Roane, and buried in the chiefe churche there.

1435.
John duke
of Bedforde
died, and
buried at
Roane.

After the duke of Bedforde, being regent of Fraunce, was dead, all thinges fell to nougnt, so as it might well appere that they lacked a Regent, for then the Frenche people, almoste voyde of fere, enterprised, not onely to revolt, but openly to take armes against thenglish. And so even at that instant chaunced great alteration of thenglish affaires. Howbeit thenglish men did not faint and geve over their cause, but by generall assent committed the chiefe and principall government to Edmonde duke of Sommersett and-

Richard duke of Yorke, in which two all their whole hope was The dukes
of Somerset
and Yorke
made Re-
gentes of
France. reposed. They sent forthwith Robert lord Willoughbie, to Paris, for succor and ayde of the towne: but king Charles, advaunced with such fortunate successe, after his forces were augmented by ayde of men from the duke of Burgoigne, sent Arthure, admirall of Fraunce, with a good part of his armie to besiege St. Denises, hoping verily after the gayning of that towne to bring in subjec- St. Denes
taken
by the
Frenche.
the Parish-
anes muti-
nied against
the Eng-
lishe and
submytted
Paris to
the kinge of
France. tion Paris also: Arthure did as he was commaunded, he marched speedily to St. Denises, and within fewe dayes tooke it by force; after which attempt happily atchieved, he proceeded to Paris, of whose comming, after that the citizens understoode, supposing the time to be nowe come when as they might safely revolt, they set sodenlye with great furie upon thenglish people, and all at once, as well men pursued them with weapon through streetes and crosse wayes as women from windowes and batelmentes of their houses cast downe stones and hott water upon their heades. Robert lorde Willoughbie was within with garrison, as is before shewed, who, contending awhile to appease thenvyous people, when he sawe himselfe not able to withstande, fled into the towre, which is right over against the church of St. Anthony. In the meane time Arthure, perceaving an uprore to be through the whole towne, approched the gates, and finding them set wide open very early in the morning by the citizens, entered, and by and by assayed to assault forceably the place which thenglish men helde, who defended themselves a fewe dayes valiantly, because they hoped upon relieve from the dukes of Sommersett and Yorke. But the dukes made them no helpe, not knowing that they had drawen themselves to that streight, by reason that thenemy so occupied and kept all passages, as that they could have no certaine intelligence: for the rumor of revolt was so vehement, as that they thought verily the lord Willoughbie, with all the garrison, eyther taken or in so huge tumult and rage of people to be slaine. Wher-

fore the lorde Willoughbie, hopelesse in the ende of ayde, yeelded the place by composition, and repaired with his men safe to Roane. And so Paris, the chiefe and principall citie in all Fraunce, was recovered againe by the Frenche, fifteen yeres after it had been brought in subjection of thenglish nation, which was the yere of our salvation 1436.

After the losse of Paris was divulged abrode through Fraunce, then generally almost all thenglish people utterly forsooke the townes beyonde the seas ; they thought, esteemed, and assured themselves to have from thenceforth no certaine place of refuge in any thereof ; no further courage, no policie, nor any sufficient force of armie ; which opinion surely, amongst all other men tooke first place in the minde of Phillip duke of Burgoigne : for that he at that time, muche moved that king Henry had a little before labored the Gantos and other Flemmings to rebellion, marched forth with a huge and perillous armie to waste and spoyle thenglish boundes. He came to Callis, he besieged it, and with all his forces assayed to winne it, and at the same time, deviding his armie, gave assault to Guynes, a towne adjoyning : but the townesmen fortified against thenemy, not onely with munition and men, but much more by nature of the place, defended themselves with great magnanimitie, which thinges when the Burgoignion understoode, esteeming that he must goe another way to worke for the compelling of them to yeelde then he had begoon withall, drove this onely drift, to debarre them of all victuall and supplye, whereby he should by famine force them to yeelde : and so placing his souldiers all over in stacions, he occupied the whole shore : he beat them with goonn, dart, and arrowe, day and night, that not a man durst peepe over the wall to annoy his enemy, or yet to make defence. While as the Burgoignion continued the siege in this sort, the duke of Gloucester, with an armie furnished in all poyntes, made haste out of Englaunde to succour his people. When the duke of Burgoigne hearde of

Callis b -
seeged by
the duke
of Bur-
goyne.

his terrible approche, and that he lay upon thother shore awayting The duke
the winde to transport, he was past hope of gayning the towne : of Bur-
and so in the dead of the night, forsaking the siege, drewe home- goyne
warde. The duke of Glocester was at Callis well early in the hearinge of
morning, and issuing to the tentes of his enemies, gott great praye: the duke of
for they, fearfully forsaking their stations, had lefte part of their Glossteres
cariages of fine force. Afterwarde with armie well arrayed he arrivall at
proceeded to spoyle the confynes of his enemy, and entering there- Callis
unto he wasted all thinges with sworde and fire; he tooke every raised his
where great bootie, and he did not onely destroye the fieldes, but seege.
set fire also upon castle and towne. Thus allured with spoyle, he
marched further forwarde, and with light assault he annoyed
townes, into the which the rurall people were gathered for feare.
So finally raging even unto St. Omers without any encounter, he The duke
returned with great bootie, first to Callis, and from thence into of Glossteres
Englannde. After these thinges there was, by persuasion of frendes, returneth
a truce treated betwixt king Henry and the duke of Burgoigne in to Eng-
for a fewe yeres: which were in the ende concluded with the wife lande.
which Phillip had the same time, for he had three; and of the A truce
last called Isabell he begott and lefte behinde him his sonne coneluded
Charles. All things afterwarde betweene the king of Eng- betwene
land and the Burgoigne were (by report) done in her name: H. 6. and
which may be thought to have been done, for that neyther it the duke of
shoulde be saide that the king of Englannde did beleeve the Bur- Burgoyne,
goignion, whom he had approved not long before to be disloyall, yet in his
nor that the Frenche king should have any cause to conceave wifes name
suspition when he should understande that the trewee was taken
not with the duke but with his wife, which her husbande was
bounde by no lawe to observe. it went.

During that time, dyed Henry archbisshop of Yorke, unto The deathe
whom succeeded John Chemp, in order of bishoppes the fiftie. of Henry,
About that time also dyed Katherine, king Henryes mother, who archebus-
shop of Yorke.

Katherine
H. G. mo-
ther died
at this
tyme.

Owen Te-
ther mar-
ried Kathe-
rine the
widow of
H. 5. and
had by her
3 sonnes.

Two earles
created.

Owene Te-
dere be-
headed.

Henry
earle of
Richmond
borne.

Richard E.
of War-
wick
dieth.

Lewes the
Kinge of
Fraunce his
sonne mar-
ryethe the
Kynge of
Scottes
daughter.

The Kinge
of Scottes
slayne by
conspira-
cye.

was interred at Westminster, in the sepulchre of her predecessors. This woman, after the death of her husband, king Henry the Fifth, being but yonge in yeres, and thereby of lesse discretion to judge what was decent for her estate, married one Owen Tyder, a gentleman of Wales, adorned with wonderfull giftes of body and minde, who derived his pedigree from Cadwallider, the last king of Brittons, of whom she conceaved and brought forth three sonnes, Edmonde, Jaspar, and the thirde, who was a monke of the order of St. Benet, and lived not longe after, and one daughter, who was made a noonne. Afterwarde kinge Henry made Edmond earle of Richmonde, and Jaspar earle of Pembroke, because they were his brothers on his mothers side. After the death of queene Katherine, the saide Owen was twice committed to warde by the duke of Gloucester, because he had been so presumptuous as by marriage with the younge Queene to intermixe his bloudd with the noble rase of kinges, and in the ende was beheaded. This Edmonde, earle of Richmonde, begott of Margarete, daughter unto the duke of Sommersett, a sonne called Henry, who, as otherwhere in placee convenient shalbe declared obteyning the kingdome, was nominated king Henry the Seventh. The very selfsame time Richard earle of Warwick dyed at Roane, his body was brought into Englannde, and buried in a newe churche at Warwicke: also James, king of Scottes, intermarried with king Charles by placing his daughter Margarete to Lewes, the saide Charles his sonne, and so king James, forgetfull of the league which he had made a fewe yeres before with king Henry, as opportunie served, mustered out a newe supplye of men to goe to his armie, which lay as yet at Carleil, and was withall aboutward to make warre of Englannde, when as he was sodenly taken by the way; for Gualter, his uncle, earle of Atholl, a factious man, and that aspired to the kingdom, made a conspiracie with certaine desperate rebelles, and caused the king to be killed upon the sodaine at St. Johnston, which was

which was no hurt to Englande : for, seeing that king James was a passing valiant man, tho occasion serving, as chaunced afterwarde, he would undoubtedly have scourged England cruelly during the factious stirre and division betwixt king Henry and Edwardre. James, his sonne, the second of that name, succeeded his father, who, even from the beginning entangled with civill sedition, was rather offensive to his owne people then to thenglish, which we will speake of at large and more aptly afterwarde. Nowe was come the seventeene yere of king Henries reigne, which was of our salvation the 1439, when at Westminster, besides London, a parliament was called, for the right and fitt establishment of things concerning as well civill government at home, as the warres abrode, in which parliament was argued, provided for, and enacted many thinges necessary for the warres, and no small number of such statutes as were requisite for the state of the common wealth : amongst which this was one, that it should not be lawfull for merchantes straungers to sell their merchaundises brought into the realme to any other then Englishmen, to thende they should not thereby engrosse and gather into their handes thonely trade thereof, which lawe is observed at this day as very commodious for the lishemen, commonwealth.

In the meane time king Charles, after he had brought in subjection Paris, and many other places within two yeres before, nowe was he in full hope easily to recover Normandie ; for from thence he had intelligence that the countrey was geven somewhat to sedition, wherefore he sent Arthure admirall of Fraunce, and with him John duke of Alanson, with a mightie armie into Normandie. They with great speede came to Avranches, and besieged it forthwith. That towne is situate upon an hill in that coast of the country which butteth upon the British ocean, fortified with high walles, and parfytely well manned. Whien thenemy had continued siege before the towne a longe time, beholde, upon the sodeine,

1439.
A parliament
at
Westminster.

Marchant
straungers
prohibited
to sell to
any heare
but Eng-
lishmen.

John lorde Talbot, and Thomas earle of Dorchester, with an armie well appoynted, came and encamped themselves as neere the enemies as could be, meaning to provoke them to battaile. The Frenche were so farre from taking that offer, as that they fortified and kept themselves more straightlye within their trenches, which when thenglisshmen understoode, removing from thence about a mile and better, they choose out a place not very commodious for themselves to fight in, thereby to make their enemies lesse afearde. But when they could not allure the Frenche to the fielde by that meane neyther, they tooke up their tentes, and in the view of thenemy entered Avranches; from thence they issued, and perceaving the French without feare to be scattered more lously abrode, put them to flight, and the passages being debarred they mett with many, whom they slew in the encounter. At the same time another hoste of Frenchie men, running rashly a forowe, even to the walles of Roane, were discomfited by Thomas Tirrell. Emongst these matters, when as king Charles, notwithstanding so many overthrowes, litle doubted that it was possible to interrupt the prosperous course of his proceedinges, yea, dayly looked for better successe, beholde, an huge storme hanging over his head, so miserable, so wicked, and so fowle, as the woorse thereof could not chaunce. For Lewes, king Charles sonne, a yonge man of monstrous disposition and frowarde condition, seeking soveraintie before his time, conspired with such like as himselfe against his father; the heades of which faction were John duke of Alanson, and another Jolin, who not many yeres before had succeeded to Lewes his father, both dukes of Burbon; and gathering an armie, tooke upon him the government of the realme, to rule all thinges, not according to his fathers direction, but after his owne fantasie; which thing when king Charles knewe, though he were wrapped in wonderfull dolours, exclaiming that he was borne to miserie, for that, as though it had beene but a small matter to

Lewes Dol-
phin of
France
conspired
against
king
Charles his
father.

have fought, thus, many yeres within his owne native soile, with straungers, with his owne subjectes for defence of his royll state and dignitie, he should nowe also be forced to fight for soveraintie with his owne sonne. Yet, being a man of readie witt and great courage, as one acquainted with adversitie, he was not utterly dismayed; but supposing it best to stay the beginning, before any violence should be used against him, he called togetheris his trustie noblemen and councellers, he deliberated with them howe to shoonn so great a daunger. The better part thought that it was not to be avoyded with warres, but with good councell and lenitie. Wherefore, first of all, letters were sent in the name of king Charles every waye to the cities, straitly charging and commaunding that no man should geve eare to his sonnes commaundement; then was pardon promised to all the conspiratours; lastly, grave and wise noble men dealt earnestly with Lewes and the dukes for reconciliation of peace; and gave plaine demonstration, that to contende nowe for the crowne in suche time as was never more troublesome, was nothing else but utterly to overthrow their countrey, which by forreyne enemies was almost destroyed alreadie. By this pollicie and persuasions, it came to passe that the conspiratours layde armor aside, and were receaved anon into the kinges favor. And so this pernitious enterprise, which was like to have The Dol- overturned the whole state of the common wealth, was stayed fyne sub- mytted to his father.

Thenglish men hearing the while of this civill discorde in Fraunce, renewed the warre with greater courage, and, having recovered a few fortes before lost in Normandie, were nowe making haste to besiege Paris, when, as besides report of reconciliation betweene Lewes and his father, newes were also brought that king Charles was gone to besiege Ponthoyse. John lorde Clifforde, of France attempted the wynyng garrison of souldiers, whereof whien intelligence was had, the duke of Pont-hoyse.

of Yorke and the lorde Talbott, with a maine hoste of chiose souldiers, marched thither, and, pighting their tentes nigh unto their enemies, offered the battaile; but king Charles, trusting to dispatch the matter without fight or hazard, refused the field, and, leaving part of his army to continue the siege, removed his campe; whereof intelligence had, the duke of Yorke was also advertised that the garrison within the towne was of force sufficient to defende it selfe, and supposing, therefore, that it should not be needfull for him to rest there any longer, purseweth thenemy, and sendeth before the lorde Talbot with horsemen to espye a place where he might by anye meane allure the king to battaile; but the king could not be drawen thereunto in that place neyther; and so the duke with great spoyle returned to Roane.

A treatye
of peace at
Calys, but
not ef-
fected.

Emongst these great troubles of warre, there was, by meane of letters sent from the pope to and fro oftentimes to both the kinges, another treatie of peace dealt in at Callis by ambassadours of both sides, which when it could not be concluded upon, the matter was referred to another time.

The duke
of Orleance
released
out of
prison,
wheare he
had contyn-
ued 26
yeares.

About that time was Charles duke of Orleance brought to Callis to be the chiefe maker of that peace, who dealing like an honourable good man, when there was no fault in him to the hynderance thereof, was at the last lett home, twenty-six yere after that he had been taken in the battaile of Agincourt. He was all that while deteyned captive because he was not able to paye his raunsome, and yet in the ende was not delivered without money neither. In the beginning of the yere folowing, the dukes of Yorke and Sommersett, who wanted no good will, spared no travaile, nor were negligent in any poynt touching their charge, conferring together about the warres, resolved that best was to invade in divers places, to thintent that when thenemic should be urged to make head against every particular invader, the force of the warres should be layde off from the boundes of Normandie (for the which they were afarde) unto

such time as some happy event might alter the present countenance of frowning fortune ; which device truely, considering the time, was allowed of all the residue as very provident. And so in the beginning of the springe Robert lorde Willoughbie was commaunded with a great crewe of souldiers to spoyle the territorie about Amiens. Also John lorde Talbot was sent with another companie to besiege Diep. Themselves the meane time prepared to destroye the boundes of Anjow. When the lorde Willoughbie came unto the borders of Amiens, because there should no signe of invasion appere, which is chiefly understoude by raising of fire, he therefore forbadd the burning of villages, whereby it chaunced that the horsmen came upon the pesantes, fearing nothing, before ever they could flye into townes, and killed of them many thowsands. The Frenche garrison, who lay in the holdes adjoyning, assembled upon thalarme made by reason of the great noyse of rurall people, and set forwarde to encounter thenemy : they joyned battaile, and the same was for a while mutually mainteyned with great courage ; but at the last the Frenche force, daunted with the death of their felowes that gave the first charge, turned the backe, whereof part were killed in the flight by thenglish men, part spoyled in the way by the earle of Saint Paule, who ayded thenglish. More then six hundred souldiers of Fraunce were killed with the sworde in that conflict. And so the lorde Willoughbie, loden with huge praye, returned after this fortunate exploite into Normandie. Also the duke of Sommersett drove away great bootie from the cities of Britaine. During which season the lorde Talbot mighty besieg'd Diepe, where was dayly skirmishing on both sides ; he pight his tentes upon an hill, and made generall thereof William Poyntes, a carefull man of his charge ; himselfe defended certaine bastiles. Nowe was the siege prolonged a great while, when in fine king Charles sent, to releeve the towne, Lewes his sonne with a maine armie. He anon upon his arrivall there tooke on hande

The lo.
Talbotte
besieg'd
Deepe.

to assault the bastiles, where was a cruell conflict. At the first ioncke many fell on both sides, and many also were sore wounded; every man ranne to and fro for his advaantage, removing then-singes hither and thither; thone laboured to holde thother straite within the bastiles, thother to repulse and keepe afarre off thenemy. At the last they came to hand strokes; then was about the bastiles a sore fight; but in thende thenglish men being expelled, withdrew themselves into the campe, and so, out of hope to gayne the towne, they raysed the siege, and retired to Roane.

Thenglishe
put the
kinge of
Fraunce to
the repulse
from St.
Selerines.

In this meane time, king Charles assailing by force the towne of St. Selerine, was there of thenglish powere put to repulse. While this stirre was abrode otherwhere, Phillip duke of Burgoigne made warre to Peter of Lucenbrowgh, earle of St. Paule, because he yet stood and helde of thenglish partie, whom the duke easily overcame, and caused, contrary to his fayth and promise geaven unto the duke of Bedforde, to joyne with king Charles, which affeebled no litle the force of Englande. Nowe forasmuch as during this time the English affaires were nothing iocunde, and the French successse also brought unto themselves slaughter, mayhame, and many mischiefs, there was yet another treatie of peace betwixt the two kinges, which, when it could not be concluded, a trewee onely was taken for eightene monthes. Thus the rage of warre ceased for a while, and king Henry tooke to wife Margarete, daughter to Rhenate duke of Anjow and king of Sicily, a yonge lady exceeding others of her time, as well in beautie as wisedome, endeued with an hault courage above the nature of her sexe, according as her noble actes (whereof we will treate in place convenient) have manifestly declared. During this season also certayne English captaines returned into Englande, desirous to see their countrey, children, and wives, and also for the preparing of newe suplye to fill upp the bandes of their olde armie. And so

A truce
concluded
for 18
monthes
betwene
England
and France.
H. 6. mar-
ried Mar-
garet da.
to the duke
of Anjou
and kinge
of Sicily.

A parlea-
ment so-
moned.

not longe after kinge Henry held a parliament, wherein many and divers consultations were had as concerning preparation for warres, which in the ende every man thought meete to be foreseen, insomuch it was apparent that the Frenche king was wholly bent, immediately after the trewce ended, to renewe the same, wherefore it was enacted, that money should be levied, and souldiers mustered: but the meane while to gratifie the people, a priviledge was graunted, that when a quarter (which is a kinde of measure) of An Acte wheate is solde for 6s. 8d., rye for fowre, barley for three, and not for trans-
portyng of above, that it should be lawfull for every man to bye and transport corne. those graines beyond the seas, so that it were not to the kinges enemies. This Act was afterwards confirmed by king Edward the Fourth as profitable for the common wealth.

These thinges thus ordered, such provision was made for the establishment of the realme as that it might appere the king from thenceforth would have more care for the common utiltie then for any one mans profite. Lastly, it was enacted, that certaine noblemen should be exalted in honor at the kinges pleasure, whom I finde to have been Humfrey Stafforde, and Henry, sonne of Richarde, of whose ende we have before remembred, earles of Warwicke, whereof Creatyon of earles. —thone remayned earle of Warwicke, thother was created duke of Buckingham; also Thomas earle of Dorchester, and William earle of Suffolke were both twaine made marquises: but William not long after was created duke. Also John earle of Huntington was made duke of Exeter. I finde moreover, that John lorde Talbot, who had so well deserved of his countrey, was made earle of Shrewsbury. In that assemble the duke of Gloucester, foreseeing An oratyon within himself that in continuance there would be alteration of made by the duke of things which would appall the courage of men very much, made Glastonbury. a long oration, persuading all men to endevour themselves dutifuly for defence of the common wealth, because he knewe assuredly that thenemies sought time and oportunitie to beguile and deceave, wherefore he thought it not meete to tary unto thende of the

trewee shoulde approche. These thinges did the duke instill into the heades of thaudience, rather to suppresse the presumptuous boldnes of some, whom I suppose he conjectured would incessantly seeke his death, then for that he mistrusted the Frenche fidelitie, who, weried with continuall bloudshed, were as loth a good while before as thenglish men were to have the like any longer. But good councell could not profite perverse and wicked mindes.

1445.

Henry
Cheecheley
died.

This was the yere of our salvation 1445; in the which Henry Chicheley, archbisshop of Canterbury dyed, xxix. yeres after he had sitt in that see. This sage father, perceaving well that the dispositions of men were by learning principally holpen to attaine unto, and reverentlye embrace vertue, had more care of nothing then to procure that his countrymen of Englande might become learned; wherefore he builded two colledges at Oxforde, wherein he placed two companies of schollers studious of learning, and gave possessions for the relieve of them that should applye learning; thone whereof was dedicate to the memorie of All Soules, thother to St. Bernard; as two sure pillers of all vertues, the exercise whereof is at this day fervently frequented in these two houses, insomuch that neyther labour nor expence of the founder hath been spent in vaine. To this Henry succeeded John Stafforde, in order of bisshops the three score and one. But let us come to the civill dissensions.

All Souls
and St.
Bernards
college in
Oxford
erected by
Henry
Chicheley.

Civil dis-
cenction
grewe in
England.

The au-
thores co-
menda-
cione of
K. H. 6

While that the trewee continued, though there lacked nothing at home for the which men needed to be continually carefull in minde, yet, by meane of a woman, sprange up a newe mischiefe that sett all out of order. King Henry was a man of milde and plaine-dealing disposition, who preferred peace before warres, quietnes before troubles, honestie before utiltie, and leysure before busines; and, to be short, there was not in this world a more pure, more honest, and more hollye creature. There was in him honest shamfastnes, modestie, innocencie, and perfect patience, taking all humane chances, miseries, and all afflictions of this life in so good

part as though he had justly by some his offence deserved the same. He ruled his owne affections, that he might more easily rule his owne subjectes ; he gaped not after riches, nor thirsted for honor and worldly estimation, but was carefull onely for his soules health ; such thinges as tended to the salvation thereof he onely esteemed for good ; and that very wisely ; such againe as procured the losse thereof he only accompted evill. On thother side, Margaret his wife, a woman of sufficient forecast, very desirous of renowne, full of policie, councell, comely behaviour, and all manly qualities, in whom appeared great witt, great diligence, great heede, and carefulnes : but she was of the kinde of other women, who commonly are much geven and very readie to mutabilitie and chaunge. This woman when she perceaved the king her husbande to doo nothing of his owne head but to rule wholly by the duke of Gloucesters advise, and that himself tooke no great heede nor thought as concerning the government, determined to take upon her that charge, and by litle and litle to deprive the duke of that great authoritie which he had ; least she also might be reported to have litle witt, who would suffer her husbande being now of perfect yeres to be under another mans government. And so this Margarete labored soone after to bring to passe that which she had purposed. But after that this woman had once enterprised the matter of her owne will and disposition, there were forthwith a companye readie to sedition, prompt to use violence, and very meete to make mischiefe and slaughter ; who, seeking to stirre upp envie againste the duke of Gloucester, did urge forwarde, exhort, and perswade her, to looke into the newes of the Crowne, to call for an accompt thereof, and so should she well understande that the duke had used the same, not for the common wealth, but for his owne private commoditie. The king of Sicile also did no litle egge on his daughter Margarete, that she and her husbande should assume the government. With these persuasions the queene incensed, taketh on hande with her Queen Margarets ambition towards the duke of Gloucesters government.

husband king Henry to rule the realme. And though the same could be accompted nothing els but (as the olde proverbe is) to till the grounde with an oxe and an asse, yet did she with great haultines undergo that charge, who firste of all other thinges did not onely cleere sequestre the duke of Glocester from dealing in publike affaires, but also afterwarde thought him unworthie to be protected from thinjurye of his enemyes: for not longe after divers noble men conspired against the duke, and appeached him of sundry criminall offences, but principally for that he had caused certaine condemned persons to be executed more greevously then the lawe of Englande appoynted: for the duke being a severe man, because he was skillfull in the lawe which is called civil, and caused malefactors to be sharply corrected, procured thereby against himselfe the hatred of ungratiouse people, who feared due punishment for their mischievous and naughtie factes. What shall we say, that even at this day the common lawyers, when their pleasure is to find some detestable fault with the civill lawe, which the more they be ignorant of in that the more they hate it, bring forth this example of severitie, as though sharpe punishment of offenders stoode not with the profite of the common wealthe, and as though greater fault did not require greater torment. Notwithstanding that the duke answered such matters as were laide against him with great commendation, yet, because his death was alreadie determined, he nothing helped his cause, saving that he was somewhat lesse greeved in minde, when as hearby it fell out that he neyther knewe of his condemnation nor prefixed time of death: for the conspiratours were afffeared least it should cause some uprore amongst the people, if that a man so well beloved of the comminaltie should be put to death openlye, and therefore determined to execute him unawares. And so a parliament was sommoned in the kinges name to be holden at thabbey of Bury, whither at the day appoynted repaired the noble men, and among them the duke of Glocester, who was taken

The duke
of Gloster
apeched
of sundry
crimes.

A parlia-
ment so-
moned at
Burye.

—sodenly the night folowing and stranguled, the woort example that The duke
ever was hearde of ; all his retinew were committed immediatly: but
after he was killed, never one of them suffered, onely divers of them,
to aggravate their reproche, were brought to the place of execution, The dukes
and straite waye pardoned. The dukes corps was had to the abbey
of St. Albones, and there interred. By these pernitious practises
of his enemies was this noble duke overthrowen, xxv. yeres after
that he had governed this lande. Thus may we see that (as Cicero
saith) to them which be in authoritie, neither court, the chiefe
helpe of all men, neyther house, the common refuge of every man,
no nor bed, wherein we are to take our rest, is voyde from the peril
of death. But it seemeth, that the title of Gloucester geven unto The au-
earles and dukes for honors sake hath beene fatall, and foreshewed thores ob-
the destruction of them who should enjoy it, forasmuch as, before servacion
this Humfrey, Hugh Spencer, and Thomas of Woodstocke sonne to ter.
Edwarde the Thirde, thone earle, thother duke of Gloucester,
ended their lives by miserable violence : also, after them, king
Richard the Thirde, duke of Gloucester, was slaine in battaile within
the realme ; so that the title thereof may as well be applyed pro-
verbially unto unfortunate personages as sometime was Scianes
horse. But againe to the matter. After that the rumour of the
dukes death was spredd abrode, many were sodenly astonied with
feare, others utterly abhorred the fact, so much was it thought to
all men an outragious and extreme cruetie. But surely the com-
mon wealth sustained thereby most losse, the stay whereof de-
pended upon no man so much at that very time as upon him
alone, which was apparent by the event of matters folowing : for
surely after the shamefull slaughter of this duke good men for-
sooke the court, in whose places succeeded such for the most part
as, seeking themselves for the soveraintie, opened the gate easily
to newe factions and division.

The yere folowing, which was the 1447 of our salvation, dyed

CAMD. SOC.

L

Henry car- Henry the cardinall bisshop of Winchester, who was the onely man by whose high wisdome and puissant wealth king Henry might have been so supported that, all feare sett aside, he might without doubt have continued in perpetuall peace at home. And

Wainflete yet it was thought that William Wainflete, who succeeded him in the bisshopricke of Winchester, was able to suplye the great losse which king Henry had susteyned by reason of his death: for that man, because of his upright administration of justice and prudence, was long time lord chancellor of England. Amongst many of his notable deedes this one was above the residue most excellent: that he, to thende his countrey might more and more daylye abounde with learned men, builded at Oxforde a college for suche as shoulde be geven to learning, in a very fitt and large place, and gave thereunto possessions, the revenewes whereof might mainteyne them with sufficient livelyhode: the woorke was dedi-

Mary Mag- cated to St. Mary Magdalene, that like as that good woman refreshed sometime the feete of Christe with sweete oyntment, so (she being the patrones of that place) good wittes might be there fed perpetually with the heavenly licoure of learning, which of them there is doone with diligence. But as touching the parliament which was appoyned for the woorking of the saide wicked traine, after the horrible murther committed, there was in the same no matter debated woorthie of memorie, save that William

The duke marquise of Suffolke was made duke, who was increased with that of Suffolke dignitie because (as after was manifest) he had beene the principall contriver of that develish devise, to kill the said duke of created.

A subsedye He was chief author also that a sore subsidie was set granted. upon the people, whereat all men rather inwardly grudged then openly withstoode, because they longed to be out of that place where such heynous attempt had been perpetrate and done: for when as the better part of noble men thought themselves nowe berefte of free speeche in parliament, all, by and by, partly op-

pressed with dolor, partly having brought to passe their practises, departed home, and so thassemble was dissolved.

While this stirre was in Englande, Francisee, an Arragonoys, a knight of Normandie, of singular vertue, and very serviceable, who had alway taken part with Englande, tooke, by stealth, from Francisee duke of Britaine, and spoyle the towne of Foun- *Fulgeras.* giers, adjoynning upon Normandie, and very riche with the wealth of the olde inhabitauntes : after which damage receaved, the duke advertised Charles the Frenche king of thinjurye done unto him ; and, because the trewce yet continewed, besought the king to demaunde againe of thenglish men that which the Arragonoys had thus reft, contrary to right, for that he was on his side. When king Charles had heard the dukes complaint, he dispatched, forthwith, ambassadours to the duke of Soommersett, requiring restitution of Fougiers, and of the spoyle taken during the trewce. Whereunto the duke of Soommersett aunswered, that he liked not of thatattempt, because it was done both without his and the kinges commaundement. But if king Charles would sende ambassadours to Loviers, *Louerium,* he would likewise sende thither some grave personages to treate of restitution : thambassadours mett at the place, and conferring together, adjudged that Fougiers, with the goodes, was to be restored, and the damages to be recompenced : which to doo Frauncisee denayed, and laide many reasons for his defence. Finally, when the Frenche ambassadours demaunded againe the goodes and possessions of their confederates ; and the Englishe affirmed, that it was not in their power to restore that which another man helde in possession ; and moreover, to avoid blame, promised, that if the Frenche king would require the premisses of the saide Fraunces by force of armes, they would not defende him : the meeting brake up without redresse or conclusion made. In the meane while the Frenche men, who, according to their hott and

fierce nature, kest in minde as well howe to be revenged of that wronge as by what meane they might procure restitution unto their confederates, tooke, by treason, Pountlarche, letting goe thenglish

The truse garrison, who, fearing no such matter, were surprised upon the
garrison, who, fearing no such matter, were surprised upon the
twene sodaime. And thus was the trewe broken, and warres begonne
England and France againe.

broken. And yet because the dealing therein earied the color rather of injurie apert, than of any subtil sleight, the duke of Soommersett beganne to demaunde of the Frenche king restitution of Pountlarche, not by armes, but by ambassadours ; but he aunswere that Pountlarche should be restored, so that Fougiers were restored to the duke of Britaine. Howbeit, king Charles his drift appeared shortly afterwarde, who, when he understoode the state of England, after the death of the duke of Gloucester, to be voyde of councell, and to burne with sedition, conceave in minde, that within short while he should be able to recover Normandie : wherefore he determined not to slipp any part of that good lucke and oportunitie, but to take time while time served. Wherefore he devided and sent out his forces three severall wayes all at once,

Mantenses. and the fame of his former successe somewhat furthering the victorie, he brought into his obedience within fewe dayes, by compo-

Lexouii. sition, Mante and Lysieux, though not without losse of some of his
souldiers. The which exploite fortunately finished according to his

Vernone. owne desire, king Charles, advauuced both in courage and force, with earnest affection also of the armie, assayeth to winne by assault Vernon, where, though thinhabitauntes were much dismayed with this sodaime attempt, yet, trusting to the garrison and hoping of reliefe, they encouraged one another, and made resistance a good while with great valour : but after that ayde was differred, contrary to their expectation, and longer than any of them would have weened, they were forced to covenant with thenemy, that if reliefe were not sent before a day certainly prefixed, so that

*Vernon be-
seiged by
the
Frenche.*

the English garrison might depart with bag and baggage, they would yeld. At whiche instant the duke of Soommersett came, upon knowledge whereof king Charles raysed his siege.

The seige
raysed by
the duke of
Somersets
aproche.

Thus when as the warre so sodenly renewed before thende of the treuce, then the whiche a greater mischiefe could not have chaunced, was of itself matter ynough to trouble the heades of the English captaines, besides that also the sodaine revolting of people hindered them so, as they were not able to relieve their afflicted state : for surely, while they prepared to succoure one citie, three or foure, folowing fortune, fell from them to thenemy. The cause wherof sprang especially for that the same was alreadie spreade over all Fraunce, that since the death of the duke of Gloucester the people of Englande were, by factious division of the nobility, diversly affected, and that William of a marquise lately made duke of Suffolke, with divers others, who (as afterwarde plainly appered,) were principall procurers to murther the duke of Gloucester, did so molest, oppress, and with innumerable discommodities afflict the commonaltie of Englande, for the exacting and gathering togetheres of money, as that the mindes of men were not set upon forreine warre, but vexed above measure howe to repell private and domesticall injuries, and that therefore neyther pay for the souldier, nor supplye for tharmie were, as neede required, put in readines ; which mischieves while the king gave no great regard unto, neyther that Margarete his wife, who, notwithstanding she had the government of the whole realme, was able to redresse ; thereupon undoubtedly it came to psase that, after it was knownen in what case the state of England stooде, both thenemy gathered hart, and the Normanes and Aquitanies were so farre discouraged, that, hopelesse of all ayde, they contended who might first revolt to the Frenche. Therefore within fewe dayes after the bruit of so great debilitie was blowen through Fraunce, the Frenche men gained, almost with no busines at all, Constans, Gysors, Castle-

Several
townes in
France re-

volted to
the king of
France.

Hareforū.
Thomas
Curson
capten of
Hareflore.

galiarde, Saint Lo, Fescant, Alanson, Newcastle, and in Gascoigny Manlisson, with the castles thereof, being yeelded in thende by thenglisch men themselves, who, compelled by sodaine revoltinges of the people, had retired thereinto. They tooke also by like happ and successe the towne of Roane. This towne the duke of Soommersett, and lorde Talbot, with other captaines of warfare, defended for a while very valiantly and constantly, and would without doubt have repulsed the present perill, if they had not been more troubled to conserve the people in obedience then to resist thenemy, who, notwithstanding seeking time incessantly to betray the towne, as soone as ever opportunitie served to worke the feate, could be ruled by no meane, but receaved the Frenche within the towne. Which thing once knownen, the captaines and garrison fledd into the castle. Here they helde themselves a fewe dayes, ever now and then annoying the towne with shott: finally, both hope of ayde and viuell fayling, they were forced to covenant with thenemy for safetie, and so departed to Cane, which David Haule, the captaine thereof, a valliant and pollitike warrier, kept with strong warde and wache. After these things the Frenche men, pursuing the victorie, and imboldened by fame of their atchieved enterprises, set forward to Hareflore, and endeavoured to besiege it: Thomas Curson, a man of hault courage, was captaine of the towne, who, notwithstanding he hearde of the heavie event of Roane, was no whitt dismayed, but at the firste assault destroyed many his enemies, which rashly assayed with ladders to scale the walles. Afterwarde the Frenche man, warned with his own losse, made trenches, planted his ordinance, and battred the town continually. So the siege many dayes prolonged, when that Curson sawe no succours sent from his owne nation, he lefte the towne to the Frenche. Not long after king Charles arrived, and setting upon Hareflew, another towne by the sea coast, on this side the river of Scyne, receaved it by compo-

sition. So farre from meane is fortune, who eyther favoureth or persecuteth too vehemently. While this stirre was otherwhere, Thomas Tirrell, having receaved anewe but very selender supplye of souldiers out of Englande, tooke on hande to besiege the towne of Liseaux, whereof he was master within a while, and, placing garrison therein, made haste towardes Cane, to joyne with Mathew Gough, who as we have before shewed, was taken at the siege of the castle of St. Selerine, and had a litle before redeemed himselfe, that they two together might somewhere encounter with thenemye, who was reported to be going to Cane, before he should come thither. But in that voyage himselfe, alone enterprising the very same day to joyne battaile with part of his enemies that he mett by chaunce, was, after much slaughter on both sides, put to flight : Thomas Tirrell and his company discomfeted. thother part of the French armie was alreadie arrived at Cane, which, because the discomfiture of Tirrel aforesaide had cutt off the citizens from all hope of reliefe, was within fewe dayes after yeelded upon composition that the duke of Soommersett, who was in the castle, with the residue of Englishmen, should have free libertie to depart. Uppon like condition also was yeelded the towne of Baieux, and Faloyse : but in the yeolding of Faloyse, over and besides the safetie graunted unto thenglishmen, the lorde Talbot, and all that were therein, were permitted to depart with armour, bagg and baggage : forasmuch as the Frenche men of an olde custome do boast and bragge, that their renowme and fame resteth not in golde and silver, but in dominion and conquest of the whole earth. By reason of All Normandie in which matters the remnant of Normans, all doubt sett aside, to the king subjection yeelded, by ambassadours, into the obeysance of king Charles, so of France, that thonely castle of Chirrbrowhe, scituate upon the sea coast, remayned English. Thither lastly came the Frenche men, and after except Chirrbrowhe, which was also recovered by the tharmie marched into Aquitaine, to helpe the decayed state thereof Frenche.

1451.

The acci-
dents of
the dukes
of Brit-
tan ye.

also. Thus lost king Henry all Normandie, thirtie yeres after his father Henry the 5th had by armes recovered the same, which was the yere of our salvation 1451, and the xxixth yere of his reigne. About thende of the same yere departed this life Fraunces duke of Brittaine, without yssue, by whose practises, as is even at this day reported, his brother Gyles, a very noble man, was put to death. Peter, another brother, succeeded him in possessions; but he briefly bereft of life, Arthure his uncle was made duke; and he, within two yere after, dyed of disease, without yssue, whereby thinheritance descended to Fraunces the sonne of his brother Richard.

After the conquest of Normandie, king Charles omitted no time that fitt was for the warres, knowing very well that the fortune of warre was often variable and subject to chaunge, and therefore assoone as might be conducted his armie into Aquitaine, which he reduced into his obeysaunce without much labour; for when the fame of the towne of Roane lost came unto their eares, even then mistrusting the forces of thenglish affaires, they seemed to foresee that they should be compelled to come under subjection of the Frenche. Although the dukes after their coming thither ceased not to fortifie holdes, to supplye the decayed crewes of souldiers, to exhort the people that they would remayne obedient and dutifull; also both by often letters and messengers to geve intelligence unto king Henry concerning the hazarde of losing that province, and to require ayde, yet none came out of Englannde. Whereby it fell out that the Aquitanies, seing afterwarde before their eyes thenemy readie, as well to invade forceably as also to spoyle the countrey, while that every man for himselfe regarded nothing els but to defende his owne private fieldes, townes, and possessions at home, were in that respect more negligent and fearfull to make preparation for warre, least by resistance they might cause their great losse. Yet thenglish nation, who of their owne naturall dis-

position are wont not to geve over, no not even at the very death, endevoured with tooth and nayle to avert that adverse fortune ; for seeing that many of their people did revolt to the Frenche, and that those of Cardeux beganne alreadie to be seditious, they encountered with thenemy by the way as he came and fought a fielde not farre from the towne, which was mainteyned manfully, but in the ende, oppressed with multitude, they were discomfited. Many truely were killed, but some also taken ; yea, of the Frenche, who were twise so many in number, were wanting tenn thousand, who therfore lesse pursued thenemy, contenting themselves with that victory though very blouddy, whereby finally they wannte all Aquitaine ; for the forces and puissance of Englande were so wasted with this overthrowe, that assoone as the cities adjoyning hearde thereof, they sent forthwith to treate with the Frenche of submission, and not longe after yeelded in very deede. After that Bourdeaux was recovered, Baione, the last of all the cities in Aquitane, came under the subjection of Fraunce. The Englishmen that were left alive, oppressed with so great calamities, made repaire unto their shippes, under the conduct of the dukes of Soomersett and Yorke. Heare, when thenemy, who was glad of their departure, did nothing urge nor hinder them, they prepared for passage ; and so, after the redemption of captives, they tooke shipping, lowsed forthwith, and with prosperous winde returned into Englande. Thus was Aquitane lost, about 299 yeres after that Henry the Second had receaved the possession thereof in the name of dowrie of Aleonore his wife, as we have before mentioned in the twelfth booke, which was the yere of our Lorde 1153, and 222 yeres after that king Henry the Thirde had recovered the same of Philip the Faire, king of Fraunce, being taken from John, his father, a little before. This yere, wherein thenglish nation lost their dominion in Aquitane, was the yere of our Lord God 1452. And as for these viettories, so valiantly atchieved by king Charles,

Aquitaine
lost to the
Frenche,
having
byne in
subjectyon
to England
299 yeares.

1452.

sicknes; whereunto the Kentish people were most prone, as well
for that they can hardly beare injuries, as for that they are desirous
Jacke Cades
rebellyon. of novelties; for whether it were by instigation of Richard duke
of Yorke, who, aspiring to the crowne, sought to make innovations,
his pollicie tendyng to this ende, that by occasion of discorde
amongst the commons he might procure himselfe authoritie, and
become the head of some one faction, or els that they were de-
sirous to revenge injuries done unto them, especially by the kinges
officers, so it was they tooke weapon in hande, made one John,
by surname Cade, their captaine, and gathering a great power to-
gethers, marched towardes London, whither as soone as they
approched, they incamped themselves upon the next hill there-
unto. Here, consulting deeply upon the matter, certaine were
chosen to present their supplication full of complaints unto the
king, and to declare, that there thassemble in this forceable
maner was for the libertie of their countrie, against certaine his
counsellours, who molested his people with intollerable exactions
of money; and if it might please him to cause them be dulye
punished, they were readie to laye weapon apart. The king,
thinking it unmeete to geve audience to the messengers of this re-
bellious rowte, but rather with speede to represse the fury of their
Sr. Hom-
frey Sta-
ford sente
against the
rebelle
Cade. enraged commotion, sent forthwith against them Humfrey Stafford,
knight, with a choyse bonde of men, upon whom they gave charge
as he came, and at the first encounter put him to flight. After-
Cade enters
London. which happy attempt they allured unto them on every side, in
hope of spoyle, an huge number, as well citizens as countrey people,
and so together in warlike maner marched towardes London,
wherinto they entered at the first without any harme doing; but
afterwarde, moved by covetousnes, they spoyled the houses of cer-
taine wealthie citizens; and yet, because they would not be re-
ported to seeke after spoyle, they gave out, that the same was
done in revenge of wronges committed by the said citizens. But

that dealing turned in the end to their owne damage ; for many of good calling, who were privily well pleased with that rebellion, in hope of some reformation that might growe thereby, when they saw the Kentish men fall to spoyle the towne, fearing what might chaunce to themselves, they thought it not meete to expect any longer the event of that furious enterprise. But all this while that the Kentish commons raged with erueltie upon the citizens, John Saye, none went about to withstande them before that John Saye, lorde treasurer of England, with sundry other gentlemen, were beheaded. Then Thomas Chalton, lorde maior of the citie, and the sheriffes, with otheres Thomas Caninge and William Huline, determining by one meane or other to make head against so great mischifie, levied quickly a mightie force of souldiers, and because John, captaigne of the commons, kept his men beyonde Temmes, at the village of St. George, in the suburbes, and thither repaired himselfe every night, therfore, under the conduct of Mathew Gough, they set upon the rebels about midnight, and tooke the bridge, killing the watch and warde thereof. But they founde the Kentish men not unprovided, for as soone as they, who for feare lay in armour both day and night, understoode by elamor of their company that the citizens were upon the bridge, by and by they russhed upon them, and the fight was forthwith fierce and eruell. After that Mathew Gough sawe the Kentish men make mightie resistance otherwise then he would have weened, he anon advised his folkes no farther to proceede, but onely contended to keepe the place which he had taken untill it were day, that the rest of the citie, hearing the noyse, might certainly know to what place they should resort for relieving of their felowes ; but the commons so forceably preassed upon, that the citizens were compelled first to geve a little grounde, and after, with great slaughter, to forsake the bridge. The Kentish men anone supplied their places, and being masters of the bridge, set fire on both sides in the houses builded thereupon. Then

Londone
bridge fired
by the
rebell Cade.

sicknes ; whereunto the Kentish people were most prone, as well for that they can hardly beare injuries, as for that they are desirous of novelties ; for whether it were by instigation of Richard duke of Yorke, who, aspiring to the crowne, sought to make innovations, his pollicie tendyng to this ende, that by occasion of discorde amongst the commons he might procure himselfe authoritie, and become the head of some one faction, or els that they were desirous to revenge injuries done unto them, especially by the kinges officers, so it was they tooke weapon in hande, made one John, by surname Cade, their captaine, and gathering a great power together, marched towardes London, whither as soone as they approached, they incamped themselves upon the next hill thereunto. Here, consulting deeply upon the matter, certaine were chosen to present their supplication full of complaints unto the king, and to declare, that there thassemble in this forceable maner was for the libertie of their countrie, against certaine his counsellours, who molested his people with intollerable exactions of money ; and if it might please him to cause them be dulye punished, they were readie to laye weapon apart. The king, thinking it unmeete to geve audience to the messengers of this rebellious rowte, but rather with speede to represse the fury of their enraged commotion, sent forthwith against them Humfrey Stafford, knight, with a choyse bonde of men, upon whom they gave charge as he came, and at the first encounter put him to flight. After which happy attempt they allured unto them on every side, in hope of spoyle, an huge number, as well citizens as countrey people, and so together in warlike maner marched towardes London, wherinto they entered at the first without any harme doing ; but afterwarde, moved by covetousnes, they spoyled the houses of certaine wealthie citizens ; and yet, because they would not be reported to seeke after spoyle, they gave out, that the same was done in revenge of wronges committed by the said citizens. But

Sr. Humfrey Staf-ford sente the
against the
rebelle
Cade.

Cade enters
London.

that dealing turned in the end to their owne damage ; for many of good calling, who were privily well pleased with that rebellion, in hope of some reformation that might growe thereby, when they saw the Kentish men fall to spoyle the towne, fearing what might chaunce to themselves, they thought it not meete to expect any longer the event of that furious enterprise. But all this while that the Kentish commons raged with crueltie upon the citizens, John Saye, treasurer of England, with sundry other gentlemen, were beheaded. Then Thomas Chalton, lorde maior of the citie, and the sheriffes, with otheres Thomas Caninge and William Huline, determining by one meane hedded by or other to make head against so great mischiefe, levied quickly a mightie force of souldiers, and because John, capitaine of the commons, kept his men beyonde Temmes, at the village of St. George, in the suburbs, and thither repaireed himselfe every night, therfore, under the conduct of Mathew Gough, they set upon the rebels about midnight, and tooke the bridge, killing the watch and warde thereof. But they founde the Kentish men not unprovided, for as soone as they, who for feare lay in armour both day and night, understoode by clamor of their company that the citizens were upon the bridge, by and by they russhed upon them, and the fight was forthwith fierce and cruell. After that Mathew Gough sawe the Kentish men make mightie resistance otherwise then he would have weened, he anon advised his folkes no farther to procee, but onely contended to keepe the place which he had taken untill it were day, that the rest of the citie, hearing the noyse, might certainly know to what place they should resort for relieving of their felowes; but the commons so forceably preassed upon, that the citizens were compelled first to geve a little grounde, and after, with great slaughter, to forsake the bridge. The Kentish men anone supplied their places, and being masters of the bridge, set fire on both sides in the houses builded thereupon. Then

Londone
bridge fired
by the
rebell Cade.

might one beholde a lamentable sight, for some flying the fire, ranne headlong upon the weapons of their enemies, to their owne destruction ; other, alas, with horrible shricks and cryes, were suffocate in the flame ; many, moreover, valiantly fighting, were killed in the conflict it selfe, and amongst them Mathew Gough, a man of passing prowesse, very dutifull to his countrey, and of great renowne in martiall affaires, who had served beyond the seas with great commendation more than twentie yeres ; but finally, such was the chaunce, that he who was invincible in so many conflictes with forreyne enemies, was, in the ende, of his owne countrymen rewarded with death. But when the king perceaved that the Kentish people could not be subdued by force, thinking to pacifie them by lenitie, he proclaimed pardon to all them that were in that rebellion, John Cade, their captaine, onely except, who being the head of that heynous enterprise the fact of it selfe would by no meane suffer unpunished : whereupon the people, as having that which they desired, hasted home immediately with the spoyle they had gotten, leaving their captaine, who was taken soone after, and lost his life for his labour.

When this insurrection in Kent was pacified, soone after, another more perilous rose upon the sodaine, which much more subverted the forces of the common wealth ; for as the body which hath been recovered of infirmitie is more extreme sick when by resydivation it falleth downe againe, so the common wealth, when after the ende of warres beyond the seas, and of this Kentish commotion, the same fell againe into intestine division, was more vehemently afflicted. For Richard duke of Yorke, who aspired to the soveraintie, trusting to that title, whereby, as we have before described in the life of king Richard the second, thinheritance of the kingdome was to descend unto the house of Yorke, after he perceaved that the rebellion in Kent had with the rage thereof nothing prevailed, then enterprising to attempt and practise

Mathewe
Gough
slayne.

Pardon
proclaimed
to the
rebells ex-
cept Cade
himselfe.

Richard
duke of
Yorke sett
on foote his
clayme to
the crowne.

greater matters, began to conferre his newe devises with Thomas Courtney earle of Devonshire, and Edward Brooke, a man of a sharpe witt, how he might, without note of treason, obtaine the same. And because Edward duke of Soommersett was thonely man living at that day, who, by watchfulnes, care, and perills, which he did often undertake, and also by good advise, supplied the part of a good counceller, who also principally desired to have the realme delivered from factions, the king safe, and all things quiet; the duke of Yorke, therefore, not doubting but thother would withstande his purpose and practises, determined to pushe at him, that eyther he might be brought to utter confusion, or els in hatred of the common people, and envie of the nobilitie. And so he made haste with all diligence to gather an armie, to allure unto him most lively youthes, promising to reward them with great matters ; and because he should not seeme to practise any thing against the king, he published openly, under pretence of revenging common injuries, that he woulde persecute with weapon certaine of the kinges wicked councellers who afflicted dayly the poore English people, where no neede was, with detrimentes innumerable, and spoyled the realme. Many mo things did he sowe amongst the common sort, that his drifte might not appere to his adversaryes. And so publishing that he toke this warre on hande for thutiltie of the common wealth, he proceeded, conducting a right great armie into Kent, whither when as he came, he choosed a place to encampe in tenne miles from London, where he had intelligence by certaine espials, every howre of the day, what was done about the king. And to thend he might not lack supplye of souldiers, in case he should joyne battaile, he commaunded Edward his sonne earle of Marche, a man both of great courage and councell, to levy newe forces at home, and therewithall to folowe him ; which things when king Henry understande, he called the councell together, and explaned unto them

all such intelligence as was brought unto him of the duke of Yorke comming into Kent, and demaunded particularly of every man what he thought of that commotion, and what remedie was to be applyed to the same, being of so great importance. They all thought it very meete to goe against the duke of Yorke speedily, with an armie royall, to incampe the same in viewe of the duke, and then to demaunde of him what the matter was, why he should as an enemy to his countrey enterprise warre.

The duke
of Yorke in
armes
mette by
the kinges
armie.

This councell was allowed, and the king conducted his armie almost in a square battaile into the viewe of his enemies sooner then they thought of: from thence he sent ambassadours to knowe the cause of so great stirre, and to make an atonement, if so be that they should understande the demaundes of the adversaryes to be reasonable. When duke Richard had hearde the ambassadours, whether it were that he was afeard to daraigne battaile, or that he was abashed of the kinges sodaine arrivall, or els upon hope of better oportunitie afterwardes to proceede in the matter, he aunswere that he would lay armor apart, and willingly come to the king to aunswere that which his highnes would object against him, so that first the duke of Soomersett might be by the kinges commaundement committed to warde. When the king had receaved this aunswere by thambassadours, considering that he coulde not without mortal battaile reduce the duke to reason, nor without great stirre appease civill dissension, if he should seeke reconciliation by dint of sworde; he therefore upon good advise commaunded the duke of Somersett to withdrawe himselfe into his house, whereupon the duke of Yorke dissolved his armie, came to the king, and much complained upon the duke of Soommersettes pride and avarice, and, by accusing him, seeketh only to winne favor of others. But the duke of Soommerset, thinking it apperteyning as well to his dutie as to the profite of the common wealth not to put up that open reproche, could not

The duke
of Somer-
sete re-
strained.

refraine, but needes would come againe to the campe, and aunswere openly to thoffences wherewithall he was burdened; he appeached likewise the duke of York of treason, that he and his adherentes had conferred together howe to gett the kingdome. By meane of these speeches it came to passe that in the kinges returne the duke of Yorke was brought as prisoner to London. Here while the king, having assembled together a councell of the nobilitie, sought to trye out the truth of the cause, the dukes fell at great wordes betwixt themselves, thone objecting to thother most high and heynous offences. But the duke of Soommersett, who foresawe the things that soone after happened, was specially earnest to have the duke of Yorke apprehended, and by torture compelled to discover his secrete practises, to confesse his offence, that upon his owne confession he might be attainted, and so by losse of one noble man the flame of intestine warre extinguished. Moreover that his sonnes might be proclaimed enemies to their countrey, and thereto he besought God that such an enemy might not escape unpunished.

This did the duke of Soommersett, because he accompted it for certaine that the duke of Yorke aspired to the kingdome, and had determined the destruction both of him and also king Henry. But the fatall desteny could not be avoyded by anye humane pollicie, for many lettes there were why the duke of Soomersettes sayinges tooke no place: first, the confidence and boldnes of the duke comming to the king so simply without his army, which was thought of many men to proceede of a cleere conscience, though indeede it was plaine dissimulation; secondly, a late rumor, whereby it was bruted that Edward, sonne to the duke of Yorke and heyre apparant, was marching speedily towardes London, accompanied with an huge hoste of lustie and brave souldiers: thirdly, ambassadours were sent from Bordeaux who gave intelligence to king Henry that their citizens, having conspired togetheres, from Bur-

denly to
offere their
submission
to H. 6.

The duke
of Yorke
discharged.

1453.
Edward,
sonne
to H. 6,
borne.

Jo. Staf-
ford, arch-
bishop of
Canter-
bury.

Ambas-
dores of
Burdeux
came into
England
for succore.

The lord
Talbot ap-
poynted to
prepare an
army for
Aquitane.

were readie to turne into his obeysance if he would sende an armie into Aquitaine, and that oportunitie served therefore very well, insomuch that there was no force of Frenche souldiers with them fit for the field, and that therefore nothing was to be preferred before this warre. For these very causes Richarde duke of Yorke was permitted by the king to depart home, full of yre and indignation, who even then resolved within himselfe to adventure his very life, so that once at the last he might revenge thinjury of his enemyes. But the duke of Soommersett by this contention, when the duke of Yorke was in a sort exiled, gott greater authortie, and with Margarete the queene ruled all things. That was the yere of our salvation 1453, and since king Henry begann his reigne the xxxijst. when as of Margaret the queene was borne Edward, thonely sonne of the said king Henry. He even from his infancie gave hope of most excellent disposition, and at the yeres of discretion proceeded no lesse in vertue. In which yere also dyed John Stafford, archbisshop of Caunterbury, in whose place was surrogate John Kempe, bisshopp of Yorke, in order of bisshops the liii., whom Nicholas the 5th bisshop of Rome made Cardinall. Also William, both bishop of Coventre and Lichfield, was translated unto the see of Yorke, who was in rew of bishoppes the 55.

Thambassage of the Burdeaux men being heard, it was thought good that warre should be renewed; the fidelite of the citizens thereof was greatly commended, and the king promised to sende the lord Talbot with an armie into Aquitane, and to make warre upon the king of Fraunce by sea and lande. With this answer (being according to their heartes desire) thambassadours privily returned in like order as they came, and, reporting king Henryes determination, confirmed their felowes in the purposed attempt. But the lorde Talbot, after he knewe the kinges pleasure to be that an armye should be levied, and assoone as it were readie be transported with celeritie into Aquitane, tooke on hande tha

voyage with so much livelynes of minde as that he had not been
seen more carefull touching any matter of warre at any time
before; what shall we say to that he thought every hour longer
than other while tharmye was prepared. Therefore he mustered
out the best souldiers he could finde; he prepared weapon, horses,
and other implements of warre; also victuall plentie; and finally
all other furniture that is wont to be necessary for such warre as
was to be kept in sundry sortes, and should have neede of many
thinges. So having all things prepared to his owne satisfaction,
and his navie furnished, he sayled into Aquitane, whither when he
came with reasonable good winde, and had landed his armie, he
scoured over all the countrey adjoyning upon Burdeux, he sent
out certaine bandes of soldiers every way, who sealing farre abroade
might put thinhabitantes in terror. Thinhabitantes of Bur-
deaux, hearing of the lord Talbotes arrivall, sent secret mes-
sengers unto him, late in the night, that he would approche nigher
the towne. In the meane time all others, except onely those who
were privie to the conspiracie, were stricken in such sodaine feare,
that all went out of order. But especially the Frenche souldiers
who were lefte for defence of the towne, practising upon thap-
proche of the lord Talbot to flye away, fell into the handes of
thenemys, who, nevertheless, casting away their weapons, the
lord Talbot preserved in safetie. When Burdeaux was recovered,
and fortified with garrison, the lorde Talbott, departing from
thence, receaved almost without any payne or trouble certaine
townes adjoyning, and their castles withall; for all people of those
partes generally did willingly submitt themselves into the obedience
of thenglish nation, because they receaved often damage of the
Frenche men, and were brought nowe by reason of continuall
warre into great searsitic of all thinges; wherfore, at the same
time, came messengers to the lord Talbott, from cities afarre off,
also, promising to doo with all their heartes whatsoever he would

Burdeulxe
recovered
by the
Englishe,
and divers
other
townes and
castles re-
volted to
Henry 6, in
Aquitaine.

commaunde. In the meane season king Charles, who laye about Towres, after that he had receaved often intelligence of the lorde Talbots doinges, and that he was also certified of the revolting of Burdeaux and others, he gathered forthwith great forces, and marched toward his enemies, sending before a great part of his armye into the countrey of Perigneux, to besiege the towne of

Chastillon
besieged
by the
Frenche.

Chastillon, which thenglish men had taken, and helde with garrison. They proeceeded on that voyage with great celerite, they compassed the towne with a siege, and erected fortifications for the purpose.

The lorde Talbot hearing hereof, marched to Chastillon with a part of his armie; taking great journeys, he intercepted certaine Frenche souldiers roving negligently abrode in the countrey as he went; he incamped himselfe nigh unto the trenches of his enemies, and the day folowing, in good order of battaile, assaulted them in their campe.

The battle
of Castilon
fought be-
tweene the
lo. Talbot
and the
French.

The battaile was blouddie in the very trench, and so doubtfull that hard was it a long time to disererne whether side should gett the better. But when the Frenche men, within a while, releived ever their wiered and hurt souldiers with fresh and new supplye, and so still renewed the fight, and that the

The lord
Talbot
slayne, and
the English
discom-
fited.

lorde Talbot fell sodenly from his horse, being hurt with the shott of a pece, then finally the English souldiers, astonied by the fall of their captaine, were put to flight. Many yet were killed in

the place where they stooode. The footmen ranne some one way some another, who about sunne sett being assembled, came hardly to their owne company: a thousand English men and moe were wanting, and amongst them the lorde Talbot, and many other renowmed men of very good calling. This was the ende of John lorde Talbot earle of Shrewsbury, xxiiii. yeres and more after he had warred in Fraunce with moste high renowme. Truely a very noble and valiant man, whose puissant prowesse mad thenglish name most terrible to the Frenche man. Of thenglish horsmen, who feld first, some repaired to such holdes adjoyning as were in

the handes of the English, some to Burdeaux ; but the Frenche men, folowing the victory, pressed more earnestly then before the Chastillions, whom they compelled soone after, dispairing of succours, to yelde. When Chastillon was recovered, they gott soone Chastylon loste to the after from thenglish nation, partly by force, partly by composition, French. all the residue of the townes. Burdeaux onely remayned, wherein was all thenglish force. This tooke on hande king Charles to besiege, Burdevlx and spending many dayes in vaine, did nothing annoye thenemy, recovered by the but rather himselfe dayly receaved damage, forasmuch as thenglish Frenche. issued often out of certaine fortes which they had made upon the shore : and on thother part, the citizens who were giltie of the conspiracie, dispairing of pardon of the Frenche kinges hande, valiantly defended themselves ; but at the last, both two, almost sterveyd with hunger, were constrained by necessitie to receave conditions, which king Charles had often before offred, for rendring of the towne, which were as followeth, that the treason should be imputed to no man, and that thenglish men should depart ; who, so dismissed, returned safely into Englande with armor and all other substance.

This, finally, was the ende of forreyne warre, and likewise the renewing of civil calamitie : for when the feare of outward enemy, which as yet kept the kingdome in good exercise, was gone from the nobilitie, such was the contention amongst them for glorie and soveraintie, that even then the people were apparently devided into two factions, according as it fell out afterwarde, when those two, that is to say, king Henry, who derived his pedigree from the house of Lancaster, and Richard duke of Yorke, who conveied himselfe by his mothers side from Lyonell, sonne to Edward the Thirde, contended mutually for the kingdome. By meane whereof these two factions grewe shortly so great through the whole realme that, while thone sought by happ or nap to subdue thother, and raged in revenge upon the subdued, many men were utterly destroyed,

The duke
of Yorke
settes his
tyle on
foote again.

and the whole realme brought to ruine and decay. But the source of all this stirre rose (as we have before shewed) from Richard duke of Yorke ; for he had conceaved an outrageous lust of principalitie, and never ceassed to devise with himselfe howe and by what meanes he might compasse it ; thinking nothing better for his purpose then to stirre up the hatred of noble men against the duke of Sommersett, it greeved him very much that the realme was ruled by his appoyntment. And therefore he dayly reported every where to all the nobilitie, that the state of the common wealth was most miserable ; the same he ceassed not to detest and bewaile ; and ascribed the cause of all that mischiefe to the duke of Sommersett onely, whom he termed, reviled, and dispraised, to be an unjust, false, prowde, and cruell tyrant. He founde much fault also with king Henry, saying that he was a man of softe and feeble spirite, of little witt, and unmeete in all respectes for the right government of a common wealth, and therefore that it touched nobilitie to thinke of the matter, or rather to devise remedie. By complayning of such thinges, the duke brought briefly to passe that well many of the nobilitie did likewise mislike the present state of the realme as it was nowe ruled, and withall studied to alter all thinges, as men whom ambition and avarice had invaded a good while before, and nowe vehemently oppressed. Then when as parties begann by litle and litle to be diverslye affected, the duke of Yorke procured chiefly to be of his faction two Richardes, Nevills, thone earle of Salesbury, the other, his sonne, earle of Warwicke. This last had married Anne, sister to Henry duke of Warwicke, who died a few monthes before ; in the right of which yonge lady he was by the King created earle thercof. He was a yonge man, not onely

The duke
of Yorke
his descrip-
tion of
H. 6. and
the duke of
Somerset.

The earle
of Sales-
bury and
Warwick
take parte
with the
duke of
Yorke.

The dis-
criptiōne
of the earle
of War-
wickes
vertues.

mervailously adorned with vertues in deede, but also had a speciaill gifte, as it were by art, even from his infancie, in the shewe and setting forth of the same ; for his witt was so ready, and his behaviour so courteous, that he was wonderfully beloved of the people.

He was also liberall to all men, which helped him much to thattayning thereof. Moreover, the haultines of his minde, with equal force of body, encreased the same popular good will. By reason of which mattters the people were fully pursuaded that there was no matter of so great importance which the said Richarde was not able to undertake, wherefore he became within a while of such estimation, that whither as he inclined, thither also swayed the more part of the people. Thus much of the sonne. Thother The mary- Richard, the father, was equal to him in vertue, but not so well age and issue of the beloved. He had in marriage Alis, thonely daughter of Thomas earle of Montacute, earle of Salesbury, who (as we have before written) Salesburye. was killed at the siege of Orleance, and succeeded to his inheritance. He begatt, of the said Alice, these children,—Richard, earl of Warwicke, John, and George. Nowe I returne to my purpose.

After that the duke of Yorke founde the two Richardes, the father and the sonne, to be on his side, he prepared warrē, and to The duke of Yorke in arms; that he applied wholly both witt and wisedome. Not longe after the King levies forces. he began his journey towardes London with an army well appoynted. The rumor of so great insurrection put the citie in passing terror, when every man did see beforehande, that eyther he must be in extreme daunger, or els runne in displeasure of some one or other noble man. When the king knewe of his adversaryes repaire, he levyed an armye, and determined with speed to goe against them, that he might joyne battaile with them in some place of Yorkshire, farre from London, because he held that citie suspected, for the inconstancie of the commonaltie, being desirous of novelties. But he was not past two dayes journey on his way, when he had intelligence that the duke of York, who had taken great journeys, was at hande; then, constrainyd to encamp himselfe at St. Albones, he kept his men in armor, and sent in Att the bat- the meane time straite commaundement to his adversaryes that talle of St. Albones they should not come against him, nor, like enemies to their was slaine

divers
greate men
on the
Kings
party.

country, disturbe the people with sedition. While king Henry dealeth in this order, more desirous of peace then warre, Richard earle of Warwick sounded the alarme, and first of all other gave charge upon the kinges souldiers, because the company which he ledd did exceede both in number, and in force of footmen. They on thother side receaved also the charge willingly. They fought fiercely upon both parties, from early in the morning till nine of the clock, with much slaughter, while at the last, by reason of the dukes releaving his weried souldiers with fresh suplye, the kinges armie was discomfited, and many souldiers killed, with their captaines, of which number was Edmonde duke of Soommersett, Henry second earle of Northumberlande, John Clifforde, and many other valiant knightes: but king Henry conceaved great and uncredible sorowe for the losse of the duke of Sommersett, because he had reposed all his hope in him, and for that such a noble captaine, who had fought valiantly so many yeres against the Frenche men, should nowe finally be killed of his owne countrymen, with whom yet the vertue of the man was of some account, insomuch that they caused his corps to be brought and buryed in the abbey of St. Albones adjoyning. This Edmonde lefte behinde him three sonnes, Henry, Edmunde, and John, who also tooke part with king Henry. Moreover many were taken, in the numberwhereof was king Henry himselfe. That was the yeere of our salvation 1456, and since king Henry begann his reigne xxxiiii. dishonoured with this domesticall discomfiture. In which yere John Kempe, archbisshop of Canterbury, dyed, before he had sitt in that see three yeres complete, whom Thomas Burscher bisshopp of Fly folowed, the lxiii. in order of bisshopps of Caunterburye, who was within a while made cardinall of the title of St. Cyriacus. About the same time Osmond, who sometime had been bisshopp of Salsbury, was by Calistus bishop of Rome canonized for a saint, because he had been a perfect holy man.

The duke
of Somer-
set buried
at St. Al-
bones.

King H. 6
taken at
the battell
of St. Al-
bones.

1456.

Osmond
bushope of
Salesbury
canonized
for a St.

His body is even at this day kept at Salesbury in the chiefe churche there, with great reverence, for that there are shewed many miracles. Also Charles king of Fraunce departed this life, who made Charles Kinge of France diethe. his name famous universally, by reason of his often calamities ; for he exercised not his youth in pleasures, but in toyles and troubles, who had ynough to doo to recover his auncient inheritance of the kingdome. Heroof may we knowe, that calamitie bringeth oftentimes great renowme, which of the contrarie part pleasure doth never. Lewes the 11th succeeded his father.

The duke of Yorke after the victory obteyned, calling to minde howe he had published at the beginning that his rising was for reformation of the common wealth, armed himselfe with mildness, mercie, and liberalitie, and was so farre from laying violent hands upon king Henry, that also he brought him honourably to London as conqueror of the field. Here consulting by and by with the two Richarde Nevilles, and divers other noble men, whom he thought meete to be ealled to that assemble, he procured himselfe to be made protector of the realme ; Richard Nevill, the father, lord chauncellor of Englande ; and Richard Nevell, the sonne, captaine of Calis ; whereby the government of the realme might rest in him, and Richard lord chaneellor ; thother Richard might have charge of the warres ; and so Henry might be king in name and not in deede, whom they thought best to forbeare at that time, least otherwise they might stirre up the commonaltie against them, who loved, honoured, and obeyed him wonderfully for the holynes of his life. When matters were thus ordered, they three bare all the swaye, as well concerning civill as forreine affaires, who, to thende they might after their owne fantasies, without resistance, deprive king Henry eyther of kingdome or life at their pleasure, removed therefore from him by litle and litle his olde counsellors, put them from office and authoritie, and did substitute in their places new men of their owne faction ; like order they

devised, deereed, and performed touching all offices within the realme. But in the meane time Henry, who, not without the kinges commaundement, succeeded his father Edmund in the dukedom of Sommersett, and Humfrey duke of Buckingham, with many other noblemen who helde and stooode with king Henry, lamenting his adversitie, and not ignorant to what ende all the duke of Yorke's craftie courtesie tended, thought as time would serve to provide for the same. And therefore they went seerely to queene Margarete, made her privie of their councell, and declared that the duke of Yorke sought to deceave the king, yea, in very deede to kill him unwares, and therefore required that she would in time prevent the matter; which she might very well doo, if she would separate her husbande from those who lay in waite to destroye him. The queene, much moved with this admonition, who was afraide both for herselfe and her husbande, tooke occasion within fewe dayes, upon the season of the yere, to perswade him that he woulde, under colour of seeking for a more wholsome place, withdrawe unto Coventrie, and there provide for his affaires. Wherefore the king, seeing himselfe in daunger, rode thither, and calling an assemble of his frendes, discharged Richard duke of Yorke of the protectorshipp, and therle of Salesbury of his office, and sent by letters for them both to appere before him. But they, taking this new displeasure in evill part, after they had deliberated betwixt themselves which way and howe they would deale, at the last, with much indignation, departed peaceably; Richard unto Yorke, therle of Salsbury into his countreye, and the earle of Warwieke to Callis. Howbeit, what their resolution was, or what was the cause of their departure, I know not certainly what to write, except it were for that they were altogether unprovided for warres.

H. 6 removed to Coventry by direction of the Queen, to avoid the danger of the duke of Yorke.

The duke of Yorke & his confederates separeate themselves.

The Londoners

These seditions thus renewing, emboldened the commonaltie (of London especially) to uprone, who, set aworke by meane of an

affray, ranne upon merchauntes straungers chiefly, as they are ryse in rage
commonly woont to doo, and both wounded and spoyled a great ^{against} the stran-
number of them before they could be by the magistrates re-^{strainers}.
strained. But the brute of this busines being brought into
Fraunce, was cause of muche more harme: for the Frenche navie,
who at that time lay upon the coast of Normandie, for defence
thereof, hearing that all was in hurly burly in Englande, sent
sodenly certaine shippes, upon the hope of spoyle, unto the Kentish
coast, where, landing their men, they burned divers villages, and
gott great bootie. This civill discorde also allured James king of
Scottes to make warre upon Englande. He at the first conceavead
mortall displeasure against William earle of Dowglasse, a noble
man of great partie, because he was fully perswaded in minde
that the earle affected the kingdome. The suspicion grew so
great that hee being in the ende called by the king to conference,
and upon confidence perchance of his innocencie, aunswering very
boldly to the matter layde against him, was, by the kinges meanes,
killed out of hande. With which injury Archbolde earle of Mur-
row, and Hewgh, thearles brothers, being much moved, deter-
mined to revenge the same with weapon upon the kinges owne
person, and made open warre against him, which helde king
James longe, and put him to much displeasure: but lastly he
subdued his adversaryes and set the realme in rest: which when
he had done, hearing that in Englande they were fighting amongst
themselves, he straitway sett forwarde to burne and spoyle the
boundes thereof, and when there was no army extant any where Roxburgh
to make head against him, he besieged Roxbroughe, where, having ^{beseged by} the kyng
planted his ordinance, he framed to thassault. But as he was of Scots,
busied earnestly hereabout, beholde sodenly one of the brasen
peeces brake, whereof one peece hitt him, so that he fell downe
deade. Yet notwithstanding the kinges death, the Scottes would
not omitt the possibilite which they had to atchieve that enter-
The Frenche
invade
Kente.
James
King of
Scottes
entres
England by
force.
The earle
of Dow-
glase slayne
by the king of
Scots
command.
Roxburgh
the kyng
was of Scots,
was slayne
by the
breakyng
of a peece
of ordene-
nance.

prise, but, being very earnest thereupon, wonne it soone after. King James left three sonnes of his wife Mary; James, Alexander duke of Albany, and John. James being but a childe for yeres, was created King, the thirde of that name, and committed to the teaching of James Chenneth, bisshopp of St. Andrewes, who longe time was the governor of the lande, because he was a very good man, and adorned exceedingly with all vertuous qualities.

In the meane while king Henry, advertised that the duke of Yorke did practise nothing as an enemy against him, returned to London, and calling togetheris his counsell declared howe the Frenche men, knowing the great stirre of civill dissention within the realme, had of late enterprised to robbe and spoyle the sea coast in Kent; and on thother side, the Scottes, moved for the selfe same cause, had wonne Roxbrowghe; and that it was very like that neyther of them would be quiet except they should understande some conclusion of argument to be made amongst the noblemen; and to thintent that the same might once at the last be brought to passe, woulde himselfe seeke to reconcile the duke of Yorke, and to recover the good willes of all men, least otherwise by intestine division the libertie of the lande might be brought in hazarde. Whose advise, when all men allowed, certaine grave personages were sent to the duke of Yorke, and other noble men of that faction, requiring them to repaire unto the king. The duke of Yorke, and the earle of Salesbury, with other their confederates came to London garded with great force, because they would not be intrapped by any practise of their enemyes, whereunto they had speciall regarde. The earle of Warwicke came thither also from Callis. Here, after much mutual rehearsall of olde injuries, and querulous repetition, as well of late as of almost forgotten faultes: finally, the feare of forreyne warre was of such weight, so yrke were all men of domesticall discorde, that the

The Bu-
shoppe of
St An-
drewes
protector
to King
James the
3 of Scot-
land.

The king
moveth
uetye be-
tweene the
nobilitie.

noble men, omitting private hatred and offences, very carefull for the wealth of the countrey, gave othe, every man particularly, to continue their olde accustomed amitie. The newes whereof made all men so gladd, as that all sortes of men every where gave by mutuall oath geven to the no-
mutuall blylette for unetye.
measure. Wherefore, to geve God thankes, generall processions were universally commaunded, and especially at London, to be solemnized with much veneration, wherat the King and Queene were present in person, and a great company of noble men withall. This was the yere of mans salvation 1458, and since king Henry 1458. beganne his reign the xxxvith.

But faithlesse and seditious folke forgat soone both concorde and othe, according as it is commonly seene, that whoso delighteth in dissension, bloud, and battaile passeth litle of possessions, lawe, nor league: for not many dayes after the king and his nobilitie had been thus reconciled, a sodaine stirre there was, whether by chaunce or of purpose it is not certaine. The matter was thus: certaine of the queenes housholde made an affray upon therle of Warwicke at Westminster, where after longe fight the earle could hardly by helpe of the multitude that came to part get to the water, and from thence, by taking a whirrey, avoyde the daunger; upon this ryot, the rage of warre did so fervently rise as that all the realme was brought in uprore, and the hazarde of armes did no man escape. The earle, after this displeasure to him done, repaired to Yorke unto the duke, and his father the earle of Salesbury: to them he made relation what injurye he had receaved of the kinges servauntes. After his saide complaint therein, fearing least by his absence he might be thrust out of his office, he transported to Calis, with intent there to tarrye from time to time, while the duke might deliberately resolve upon the poynt of the matter. The duke and the earle of Salesbury, much moved with this offence, spake openly betwixt themselves in bitter and sharpe termes, that the matter was nothing els but the fraude and

An affraye made upon the earl of Warwicke by some of the Queenes houshold.

The E. of Warwick repayreth to Calis.

fury of a woman, meaning the queene, who, thinking she might do whatsoever she listed, sought nor minded any thing so much as by womanish sleight to torment, consume, and utterly destroy all the nobilitie of the lande. But afterwardes they came to the matter, and resolved betwixt them, that the earle of Salsbury should, with an armie in good array of battaile, marche to London, there to complaine unto the king for this injurious breache of amitie and agreement; and that if he should perceave himselfe able to prevaile, not to omitt thoccasion of revenging his honor against the queene and her counsellours, who so evill governed the realme. And upon this resolution the earle began to sett forwarde. In the meane time the queene, above all other, who being assisted, ledd, and advised by the dukes of Soommersett and Buckingham, was of herselfe, for diligence, circumspection, and speedie execution of causes, comparable to a man, tooke it for certaine that this late tumult had been stirred by thearle of Warwicke, purposely, to thende that upon such occasion he might set forwarde his perpensed malitious enterprise, whereby the duke of Yorke might once at the last attaine the soveraigntie. Wherefore this wise woman, supposing that it would be in vaine to treate ever any more with her adversarye of attonement, after that she understoode thearle of Salsbury to be in armes, called togethers the councell to provide remedie for the disordered state of thinges. Many thought it good to expect thearles approche, whereby it might be certainly knownen whether he minded peace or warre. Others gathered, by reason of the late seditious attempt, that the matter would not be ended without fight, and therefore that it was to be determined with all haste howe to goe against him. This opinion tooke place, and forthwith James Tuchete lord Audley was sent with an armie to meeet with thearle of Salesbury by the way, and, if occasion so required, to fight with him. The saide James tooke great journeys, and so came into the territory about Lichfielde, whither as his enemyes were al-

The E. of
Salesbury
furnesheth
an army to
jurney to-
wardes
London.

readie arrived, and pitched his tentes as neere as he could to theirs. The next day therle of Salesbury would not omitt the possibilite of fight offered, but early in the morning gave the charge. The battaile continued divers houres, but in thende the thearle wann the fielde, with great slaughter both of his enemyes and of his owne men also. In which number was James Touchet; so that almost all the kinges armye, a few noble men only except who were taken, was destroyed.

The earle
of Sales-
burye
joynes bat-
tell with
the Lo.
Audleye at
Lichefeeld,
& over-
comes, &
the lord
Audleye is
ther slayne.

After this battaile the duke of Yorke perceaving that his privie practises and secret devises were discovered, manifested, and made knownen to the king and queene, who endeavoured everywhere to avoyde the mischiefe inevitable, thought even then that dissimulation could not take any longer place with them, and therefore, as well for thobteyning of the kingdome, as for the safetie of his owne life, determined with might and mayne to set forwarde that cause. And so, together with Richard earle of Salesbury partaker of all his practises and further fortune, he gathereth a newe armie; and soone after both together, having assembled an huge multitude of souldiers, encamped themselves in Yorkshire, meaning eyther there to abide their enemies, or from thence to goe against them in their comming. The rumor whereof being brought to London, greater then cause was, caused the king in all haste to levye an armye from every hande; wherewithall using great celeritie, as in matters of feare is often accustomed, he came into Yorkshire, and encamped not farre from his enemyes, before ever they were ascertained that he would come. But there was no feate of warre done worthy memorye; for the conspiratours diversly departed upon the sodaine, the cause whereof was as followeth: Richard earle of Warwick came to that warre from Calice with a great bande of souldiers, and joyned with the duke, and with his father. Thaumentation of which ayde so animated the duke, as from Callis that he determined the next day after to joyne battaile with his forces to

The duke
of Yorke
and E. of
Salesburye
gather a
newe
armye.

The E. of
Warwick
returned
with his
forces to

the duke of
Yorke.

Andrewe
Trollope
and his
company
departed
from the
earle of
Warwick
to the
Kinge.

The duke
of Yorke
and the
earles of
Salesbury
and War-
wicke de-
parted the
feelde with-
out fyghte.

The duke
of Yorke
fleeth into
Ireland
and the
earles of
Salesbury
and War-
wicke flee
to Callis.

enemy. But in the meane season, Andrew Trolop, a most faithfull man, and perfect warrier, who had longe served at Calis under king Henry, when he conceaved that they were to goe againste the king, whose true subject and defender he tooke thearle of Warwicke to have been, and no traitor or betrayer, without more adoe, departed with his retinewe, in the night time, to king Henry, of whom he was very courteously enterteyned as a faithfull olde trained captaine, which thing as soone as the duke of Yorke knewe, he begann wonderously to be abasshed and amased: for being in doubt what best was to be done, it troubled him verye much that the king (as he knew most certaine) did exceed him in number of souldiers; and it pinched him no lesse that Andrew Trollop, a passing good captaine, was become his adversary, whose prowesse and pollicie did nowe as much appall and dismay him as it had before comforted and emboldened. So when after longe consultation he could not resolve upon any poynt, because he could devise nothing wherein seemed not some great daunger and difficultie, though finally he thought it damageable to depart the field, yet presently as time required he deemed best to give place. And therefore himselfe passed thoccean into Irelande, making very fewe of his owne necrest frendes privie to his intent. Thearles of Salesbury and Warwicke, with Edwardre the dukes sonne earle of Marche, got themselves to Callice. The residue of tharmie were partly taken, and partly scattered. The king after the flight of his enemyes marched great journeys into Wales, that he might take the duke of Yorke as he feld, of whom he had intelligence geven that he should passe through that region unto the sea coast, and premised certaine horsmen to besett all the same beforehande. But the duke of Yorke had bought a shipp for a great deale of money, wherein he passed the seas before ever the horsmen approched the shore, whereof when the king was advertised, he stayed at Ludlow. Here the while of his abode

he, by advise and councell of his lords, proclaymed all his adver-
saryes traitours to their countrie ; he pronounced their goodes to
be confiscate, which after that were solde, he commaunded their
wives and children to be safely kept. He also rewarded them who
had well deserved, and eyther caused execute the captives, or
punished them by the purse, or exiled them the lande. Here he
decided olde controversies, here he receaved into his protection
the people adjoyning, who following thither seemed to be gladd of
his prosperous state and safetie. Here did he constitute and
appoynt such noble men as were of approved loyaltie and goode
minde towardes him, to governe and defende the countys of
Yorke and Durham : and here finally did he make Henry duke of
Soommersett captaine of Calice. But the olde proverbe is true : that
as soone sowing sometime deceaveth, so late sowing is alway naught.
Truely as touching this busines, long lingring hurt the king : for
if at the beginning he had bereft them of this refuge, without
doubt he had destroyed them utterly.

These thinges dispatched, the king returned to London, and,
trusting to the good will of the souldiers who were of his pay in
garrison at Calice, he sent with all diligence and speede possible
the duke of Soommersett unto his charge in the continent. The
duke went to Calice, and, shewing the king's commission, com-
maunded the towne to be delivered up to him, which thearle of
Warwicke denayed to doo, and, shutting the gates, kept him out
afarre of. The duke being much afearde, because he perceaved
that all the garrison consented thereunto, departed to Guynes, the
next towne of the kinges dominion there, and the same he re-
ceaved of the captaine, who obeyed his demaunde. Then indea-
vouring with greater care and courage to revenge thinjurye done
unto him, he begann daylye to skirmishe with thearles men. But
thearle of Warwicke, while his souldiers passed over the time in
skirmishing with the duke of Soommersett, gathered a great navie

The duke
of Yorke
and E. of
Salesburie
proclaymed
traytores.

The duke
of Somer-
sete made
captayne of
Calis.

and sent a good part of the souldiers which he had there with him to Sandwiehe haven in Kent, to spoyle the place, and to lett thaproche of his adversaryes. They arrived sodenly in the haven, where they assailed and tooke at unwares with litle labour certaine shippes well furnished, and ready to transport, which had been sent to ayde the duke of Soommersett, and were nowe earied with much preay to Calice. Then thearle of Warwicke, seeing that there was no daunger to be doubted from his enemyes, sayled speedily unto the duke of Yorke into Ireland; with him he did conferre, deale, and deliberate howe to handle their affaires, and that done returned forthwith to Calice, shewing unto his father and unto Edwardre earle of Marche the dukes opinion to be, that they should passe over with an armie into England as soone as might be, and omitting no oportunitie for the doing of any exployte to annoy the king by feates of armes, untill he shoulde come unto them with a great suplye of souldiers. They, approving this councell, sayled with celerite into Englande, and marched towardes London; for that toune being kept without watche, and nothing furnished like a toune of warre, was of necessitie open to the first assailants. Here they put in armes such of the rascall people, and others whosoever came running to them. Here they made preparation of all thinges necessary for the warre, and with an hoste gathered together of all sortes marched towardes Northampton, where as the king was arrived not longe before; which dealing knownen to the queene, who was supported by the wealth and wisdome of the dukes of Soommersett and Buckingham, who had more eye to such causes then the king had, as in who monely all his care laye, she with hawtie heart gathereth an armie, and sending for from every hande the nobilitie of her faction, who also particularly repayred with a choyse force of men, made up quickly an huge hoste. After the king understoode that he had by thindustry and diligence of the

dukes and queene, an armie of no small accompt, he determined to fight with his adversaryes, and incamped himselfe in the next medowes without the towne alonge by the river Nyne, and when he pereaved his enemyes at hande, encountering them by the way, he caused sounde the alarme. His enemyes deferred not the fight. The battaile begann very early in the morning, and a little before noone the king was vanquished. There was killed almost tenn thousande, and amongst them Humfrey duke of Buckingham, John Talbot earle of Shrewsbury, a passing excellent yonge man, and most like his ancestours, Thomas lord Egromond, and many other. The number of prisoners was also very great, because manye of the horsmen had put their horses —from them, and, as their maner is, fought on foote; and principally above all other king Henry fell in the handes of his enemyes, a man borne to the miserie, calamitie, and adversities of this life. The residue of noble men who escaped the rage of this blouddy discomfiture, with the queene and prince Edwardre, fled into Yorkshire, and from thence into the bishopricke of Durham, eyther there to renew forces, or, if they should be destitute of the hope therein, to flee into Scotlande, and there to tary while the time might geve better possibilite of fortunate successe. The earles being conquerours ledd king Henry captive to London, and calling a parliament labored earnestly to deprive him of all regall authortie. At which time the duke of Yorke, being certified of the victory obtained, arrived straight out of Ireland, and, entering into the higher house, tooke firste that place which in the parliament is proper to the king. Then after, before all thassemble, he pronounced himselfe king, persuading that he did the same by good title and right. But at the last a reverence was had of the royall maiestie; for it was concluded by parliament that thinheritance of the kingdome should come to the house of Yorke after the death of king Henry; and in the mean time Richard duke of York pre-
The battle of Northamton, where the King was vanquished and divers lordes slayne.
K. H. 6 taken in the battell.
A parliament summoned.
The parlemente restored H. 6, and made the duke of York protector, and confirmed the dukes right to be after the deathe of H. 6.

Yorke should be protector of the realme. Such was the pleasure of God, that king Henry, a most holy man, should by so many calamities, wherewithall he was continually afflicted, be deprived of this earthly kingdome to enjoy forthwith the everlasting : for a good man can never be but good, though he suffer a thousand afflictions. But the common people beleeeve that misfortune to have been by signe prodigious before prognosticated, for as much (as they say) that a litle before, when king Henry satt in parliament in his robes royall, the crowne fell from his head to the grounde. The yere in which these thinges were done was of our salvation 1460, and since king Henry begann his reigne xxxviiith.

1460.

After these thinges the duke of Yorke, knowing for certaine that the queene would not be content with the decree of this parliament, made speede into Yorkshire to pursue her, and pitched his campe at a towne distant from Yorke upon the west about fifteen miles, of some strength, by reason of a castle adjoyning, which towne is called Wakefelde ; and there he consulted with his frendes as touching thassayling of his enemyes. Some there were who thought it not meete to joyne battaile before his sonne Edward should come with newe forces ; but the duke, trusting to his owne knowledge in warfare, and the valiancie of his souldiers, yssued out of his campe against his enemyes in good array. Likewise the queene, who was resolved in minde to demaunde her husbande by dint of swoorde, and for that cause had alreadie assembled a puissant armie, when she understoode that thenemie approached, forthwith she made head against them and gave them the charge. At the beginning the fight was mightily mainteyned mutually, while that a great part of them who were in the front of the battaile being killed, the duke of Yorke's small number was environed of the multitude. Then the queene encouraging her men, vanquished the residue of her enemyes in the moment of an houre. There fell in that conflict Richard duke of Yorke, the head of that

The battell
of Wake-
field,
wherein
the duke of
York was
slayne, and
many
others
taken by
the queene.

faction, with Edmund his sonne, earle of Rutland, Thomas Nevill,
 David Hall, John Parre, Walter Limbrike, John Gedding, Eustace
 Wentworth, Guy Harrington, of thorder of knightes, and of cou-
 rageous captaines James Fitzjames, Raphe Hastings, John Baunne,
 and Roland Digbie. Richard earle of Salsbury, another head of The E. of
Salesbury
takene and
beheaded
with
others.
 that faction, was amongst others taken, who were beheaded soone
 after, and their heades, put upon stakes, were carried to Yorke for
 a spectacle to the people, and a terror to the rest of thadversaryes.
 After that, the queene, with an armie well appoynted, made spedee
 to London for delyverie of her husbande, and by the way, at St.
 Albones, mett the earle of Warwicke coming to ayde the duke of The battele
of St.
Albones,
whear the
earle of
Warwicke
fled.
 Yorke, and bringing as prisoner with him king Henry. Here the
 woman with no lesse courage then she had done before in York-
 shire, gave charge upon thenemy, put him to flight, and recovered
 her husbande. Surely this Margarete, wife unto the king, warred
 much more happily by her owne conduct and authoritie then by
 the kinges. The earl of Warwicke, thonely man upon whom all
 the weight of the warre depended, being certified, after the dis-
 comfiture at St. Albons, that Edward earle of Marche, after that
 battaile at Wakefield, wherein his father was killed, was gone
 into Wales, (and there prepared a newe armie, having put to flight Jasper
 Jasper earle of Pembrowghe, who tooke part with king Henry, and earlle of
Pembroke
made head against him,) went therefore unto the said earle of put to
flight by
the earle of
Marche.
 Marche, whom he founde by the way, comming with a great hoste
 of armed men, nigh unto the boundes of Oxfordshire. Here they
 two, arguing upon the substance of the matter, concluded to goe
 to London, which they were sure helde on their side: and so,
 taking councell of their frendes, Edward was proclaimed King, Edward
earlle of
Marche
proclaymed
Kinge.
 and king Henry utterly deprived from all regall authoritie, because
 he had not kept covenant, nor obeyed the decree of parliament, as
 though he had already woonn the field. But king Henry the
 meane while, who suspected the Londoners, and thought it not

best to goe thither, because he perceaved the remnant of his adversaries to be at hande, departed from St. Albons to Yorke, and there encreased his forces, who thought himselfe nowe at an ende of all travaile and daunger, seing the heades of the contrary faction were destroyed, insomuch that in one other battaile finally he hoped utterly to extirpe all that was lefte. But the matter fell out otherwise then he weened, when for two heades one yet remayned of passing valor and abilitie, which could not be suppressed; for Edwarde was much desired of the Londoners, in favor with the common people, in the mouth and speeche of every man, of highest and lowest he had the good willes. He was, for his liberalitie, clemencie, integrarie, and fortitude, praysed generally of all men above the skyes; wherefore there was concourse to him of all ages and degrees of men, with wonderfull affection, insomuch that some gave in their names to goe to the fielde with him; others, in the behalfe of cities, promised their good willes, and all that they might doo, and swore to be his true subiectes. By which occasions this Edwarde, brought in hope of victory, prepared as great forces as he coulde possible, that in the conflict of one day he might perfect all his travailes and victoryes. Thus being stronge, with these forces aforesaide he marched towardes Yorke, and when he came about xi. miles from the same he encamped himselfe at a village called Towton. When king Henry knewe that his enemies were at hande, he did not issue forthwith out of his tentes, because Palme Sunday (as they call it) being a solemne feast was at hande, upon the which he was rather a minded to have prayed then fought, that the next day after he might have better successse in the fielde. But it cam to passe by meane of the souldiers, who, as their maner is, like not upon lingring, that the very self same day, by day breake in the morning, after he had with many wordes exhorted every man to doo particularly his devoire, he was forced to cause sounde thalarme. His adversaries

The bat-
tle at
Towton on
Palmes
Sondae,
in which
the Kinge
is discom-
feted.

were thereto as ready as he; tharchers begann the battaile; but when their arrowes were spent the matter was dealt by hand strokes with so great slaughter that the very deade carkasses hindered them that fought. Thus did the fight continue more than tenne howres in equall ballance, when at the last king Henry espyed the forces of his foes increase, and his owne somewhat yeelde, whom when by newe exhortation he had compelled to presse on more earnestly, he with a fewe horsemen removing a little out of that place, expected the event of the fight; but beholde, sodenly his souldiers gave the backe, which when he sawe he fledd also. There was wanting of both parties about twentie thousand men. Amongst these was Henry the third earle of Northumber-
The E. of
Northum-
berlande
 lande, and Andrew Trolop, and many other men of name. The number of prisoners and wounded persons, whereof some were cured and some dyed, were fullye tem thousand. That battaile weakned wonderfully the force of Englannde, seing those who were killed had been able, both for number and force, to have enterprised any forreyne warre. Edward, that he might use well the victory, after he had a litle refreshed his souldiers from so great travaile and payne, sent out certaine light horsmen to apprehend king Henry or the queene in the flight: but they journeyed all that night continually, and all the next day without intermission, so that the second day they came safe into Scotland, and sent forth-
H. 6 and
the queene
fled into
Scotlande.
 with lamentably unto king James, that for olde frendshipp and familiaritie they might be receaved in his kingdome, and by his might and puissance defended in so great calamitie. Divers noble men had government of the lande there at that time by reason of the kinges nonage, and chiefly James Chenneth, archbisshopp of St. Andrewes, as we have before declared. King James being but a childe, after he had heard who were sent, was by advise of his saide nobilitie so far from neglecting the request and fortune of king Henry, as that by and by he went

and
Andrewe
Trolop
slain.

himselfe to meeke him, and brought him into his palace, whom, after much consolation that he shoulde with a willing and patient minde beare theevent of this late discomfiture, he interteyned with all courtesie, and used both liberally and also honorably all the while he was in Scotlande. King Henry, being bounden by this great courtesie, to thintent he might also eyther binde unto him by some benefite the king, upon whose ayde he did presently much leane and trust, eyther els might diminish the force of his enemyes, delivered up to him, to have and holde for ever, the towne of Barwicke. Yet there is a saying that king Henry did not that willingly, but against his will constrained thereunto in this extreme miserye, that he might therefore remaine in Scotlande.

H. 6 deli-
vered to
the kinge
of Scotes
Barwicke.

But howsoever the matter was lapped up, it is apparent that king James, having receaved the towne, promised king Henry all the favor and furtheraunce that he could doo any maner of way, which he performed after with diligence. When this was done, queene Margarete, with Edward her sonne, passed the seas into Fraunce unto Rhenate, her father, duke of Angeow, there by her father's helpe to prepare a newe armie; and king Henry, with certaine other noble men of his faction who folowed him, determined to tary in Scotlande, untill that by helpe of his frendes he might renewe warre againe, which he hoped would be shortly, and provide for himselfe and his owne affaires. Thus much of the variable and divers fortune of king Henry the Sixt, who reigned thirty eight yeres. But yet forasmuch as he recovered his kingdome againe tenn yeres after he had been expulsed the same, we shall more aptly in the next booke prosequete the residue both of his life and death.

EDWARD THE FOURTH.

POLYDORE VIRGILL OF THENGLISHE HISTORY THE XXIIIJth.

BOOKE.

EDWARD, after that king Henry was dryven owt of the realme, E. 4 came being in mynde muche exaltd, as well by reason of so great vice- to London and crown. tory as of the generall revolt of the noblytie and commons, ed King returnyd to London lyke a tryumphant emperor, wher, having caulyd a great assemble at Westminster, he was created king the third calendes of July, and caulyd Edward the iiijth, of that name after Wylliam the first Norman king, which was the year of mans salvation M.CCCC.LXJ. The very same yeare he held a parlyament, A parle- wherein first he establisshyd the state of the realme as it wer of moned. new, muche for the benyfit of the commonwelth, being so long neglectyd by reason of cyvill warr. Secondly, all statutes enactyd in The sta- parlyamente bypast during king Henries raigne wer repealyd, by H. 6 abolisshed, and abrogated. Lastly, his two younger brootherers, E. 4 two brothers created Dukes. George and Richard, thone was made duke of Clarence, thother duke of Gloucester; also John, broother to Richard earle of War- wick, was created marquye Montacute, Henry Buresher broother to Thomas archebysshopp of Canterbury earle of Essex, and William Fawconbrydge was made earle of Kent. To this Henry Burscher, being a very noble man, passing good, and by fame of martiall prowesse highly renowmyd, Richard duke of Yorke had geaven in mariage Elyzabeth his sister, that therby he might have him princypally his assuryd partaker alway in warres and other casualties whatsoever. The which self same thing was also the very cause why king Edward soone of Rychard dyd now create the same man earle of Essex as ys before declaryd, to thend that

both the father and his soones also might ayd and support him ; for Henry had begotten of Elyzabeth his wyfe fowre soones, William, Thomas, John, and Henry, and one onely doughter namyd Isabell, who lyvyd short whyle ; all which soones wer polityke in ther practyses, peynfull in performing, in peryll of muche fortitude, in forecast very provydent ; but most of all those vertews dyd abound in William, who was theldest. This William had maryed Anne a young lady of an approvyd vertew, and most highe parentage, daughter to James of Lusembrough earle of St. Paule, by whom he had yssue Henry, now erle of Essex (of whom we will intreat more at large in the xxvjth. booke), Cecyly, and Isabell ; this dyed of disease before she was maryageable, thother was maryed to Walter Ferryse ; but let owr speache repar to speake of that wherewithall yt began.

Whyle all things fell thus owt fortunately uppon king Edwards syd, Henry duke of Soommersett, despearing now in king Henryes affayres, revoltyd to hym also, of whome he was very curtesly entertayned ; but the duke soone repentyd that he had so doone, for king Henry had the mean while gatheryed in Scotland an army not lyttle, wherewithall he made hast sodaynly into the bishoppryk of Durham, which whan the duke of Summerset herd, he pryyly reparyd to him, and many that wer king Henryes frindes folowyd after ; yea an exceeding great number of men, in hope of spoyle, assemblyd quickly from every hand, so that for force king Henry was thought not muche inferyor to his enemy. The fame whereof was augmentyd for that every way as he went he wastyd, burnt, and spoylyd towne and field. Thus robbing and destroying he came to a village caulyd Hexame, wher he met and encounteryd with John marquysse Montacute, and after sharp fyght, as had often happenyd before, was discomfyted, lossing the most part of his army ; himself with contynuall flight recoveryd Scotland, others otherwher by lyke meane savyd themselves. Ther

Wm. Bur-
cher mary-
ed the E.
of St.
Paules
daughter.

The duke
of Somer-
set ad-
heares to
E. 4.

The duke
of Somer-
set revolt-
ed from
E. 4.

H. G re-
turnes out
of Scotland
with a
great pow-
er.

H. G dis-
confited at
the battle of
Hexam
and flyeth

wer taken Henry duke of Summerset, Robert earle of Hungerforth, and Thomas Rosse. The duke of Summerset, for altering of his mynde, was beheadyd owt of hand ; thother wer brought to Newcastle and executyd not long after, wherby others might be owt of hope seing ther afflyeted noblytie bereft of this lyfe. But king Edward, thowghe presently he thowght his affayres to be now at the last, by reason of this late victory, suffycyently assuryd, yeat was he very carefull that Margaret wylfe to kyng Henry shoulde by no meane retурne into England, to move the people ther unto any further sedition ; wherfor he causyd lay all the costes with garryson to stoppe thinvasion that might happen by sea, and wrote to all thinhabytants of the south parts not to receave the woman yf she shoulde coom, nor to ayd or releve hir any maner of way, for if they shoulde, he wold accountt uppon them as uppon his very adversaryes : he causyd lay watche also uppon all the marches of England agaynst Scotland, least any should depart owt of the realme unto king Henry. But what danger so ever might by possybilytie have procedyd from king Henry, the same was taken away incontinent ; for himself, whether he wer past all feare, or dryven depely to soome kynd of madnes, was not long in secret, who enterprysing to enter England disguised in apparell had scarce set foote therein when he was taken by the watche, and brought to king Edward at London, was commytyd to warde. When king Henry was apprehendyd the state of the realme became more quyet, for as muche as those of that faction thought from thenseforth yt was utterly unmete for them to practyse any innovations. Wherfor king Edward, voyd almost from feare of enemy, causyd a parlyament at Westmynster, and employed at his pleasure welnighe fowre whole yeres folowing for the setting of thinges appertayning to the commonwealth and good government of the realme in order convenient ; and first of all, because (according to the owld proverb) thusbandman who toyleth ought

againe into Scotland.
 Prisoners taken in the battle of Hexam.
 H. 6 as he came disguised into England out of Scotland, and was taken and brought to London.
 A parliament somoned.

E. 4 geves
to his de-
serving
servants
the pos-
sessions of
H. 6 his
followers.

E. 4
mintes
royalles,
nobles,
and groats.

Procla-
macon of
pardon to
all that
wold submit
themselves of
H. 6 fac-
tion.

Margarete
sistere to
E. 4
marayed to
Charles
duke of
Burgoyne.
The E. of
Warwick
sente into
France to
solyset
ladye of
Bona for

first to taste the fruyt of his travaylle, therfor by common assent, and authorytie of parlyament, he distrybutyd to his faythfull and well deserving servytors, the possessions of them who had holden with king Henry. After that he provokyd the people generally to loove him by all kynde of lyberalytie, geaving to the noblytie most large gyttes; and moreover, to gane unyversally the favor of all sortes, he usyd towardes every man of highe and low degree more than mete famlyarytie, which trade of lyfe he never changyd.

Also soome lawes wer reformyd, soome newly inactyd; besyde that he set abrode a coyne as well of gold as silver, which is usyd at this day, wherof the gold partly ys caulyd ryalls, partly nobles, and the sylver ys namyd grotes: fynally he causyd open proclamation to be made throught the whole realme, that all his adversayres who wold lay arms apart, and submyt themselves to his obeyssance, should be pardonyd; whoso wold not, should therfor suffer condigne punysshment. How muche this clemency was for his profyt, and what good-will the people bare to him by reason therof, well appearyd evydent, whan for that only cause he semyd afterward to be unvyncyble.

But king Edward, not content with the favor of his owne onely subjectes, determinyd also to seke thamytie of forrane princes, and the same to confirm by affynytie, that ether they might help him, or at the least not hurt him when nede requyryd; and therfor he dyd first place his syster Margaret to Charles soone to Phylip duke of Burgoygne; after that he sent Richerd earle of Warwicke ambassador into France, to demand in marriage a young lady cawlyd Bone, syster to Carlot queene of France, and dowghter of Lewys duke of Savoy. But whyle the earle travalyed into France and delt with king Lewys touching this new affynytie, with whom this yowng lady Bone was attending uppon the queene, king Edwardes mynde alteryd upon the soddayn, and he tooke to wyfe Elyzabeth, dowghter to Richerd earle Ryvers, wyfe soomtyme to

John Gray knight, by whom she had two soones, Thomas and maryage
 Richerd ; which mariage because the woman was of meane caulyng with E. 4.
 he kept secret, not onely from the noblytie of his owne bloode E. 4 mary-
 and kynred, but also from Rycherd hir father. Wherfor whan yt ed to
 was brutyd abrode throughe the realme that the same was perfytyd, Elizabeth
 all men incontynent woonderyd, that the noblytie treuly chafyd,
 and cast owt open speaches that the king had not doone accord-
 ing to his dignitie ; they found muche fault with him in that
 mariage, and imputyd the same to his dishonor, as the thing
 wherunto he was led by blynde affection, and not by reule of
 reason. And surely hereuppon either first proceeded the which
 sprang up afterward betwixt king Edward and thearle of War-
 weke ; ether els, as soom men think, an occasion was heareby
 taken to utter ther malyce before conceavyd ; for after that king
 Edward had obtaynyd the kingdome by thearle of Warwekes
 meane, as well was knownen to all men, he began to have thearles
 estimation and authorytie, which himself had made very great, in
 such iealousy that he thought yt mete to be abatyd, wherby he
 myght now use all thinges as himself lyst without contradiction
 both at home and abrode. So we fynde by experiance that frindes
 do very seldom aunswer lyke for lyke, yea rather unthankfull
 myndes do requyte muche good with great evell. These practises
 wer not unknownen to Rycherd earle of Warweke, whose hope
 though yt was to have thankfully rewardyd, yeat he dyd esteme
 yt best to disseimble the matter untyll such tyme as the
 king might casually be dryven to soom distress wherein he
 might be bold to upbraid unto him his benyfytes ; and yt
 caryeth soome colour of truthe, which commonly is reportyd, E. 4 is
 that king Edward showld have assayed to do soome unhonest act supposed
 in the earles howse ; for as muche as the king was a man who wold some wo-
 readyly cast an eye uppon yowng ladyes, and loove them inordi- man in the
 nately. But whatsoever the matter was for the which E. of
 Warwickes house.

owt, whether for injury offeryd, or envye of authorytie, so yt came to passe, that after thecarle had intelligence from his frindes of the kinges secrete maryage, and that his dealinge in the ambassage with king Lewys, as touching the contractyng of this new affynytie, fell owt in vane and to no purpose, he so highly began to be angry thereat, that furthwith he adjudgyd king Edward as a man unwoorthy of the regall scepter, mete to be expellyd by all meanes possible ; yeat ther ys a common rumor at this day, that the cause of ther variance showlde have bene this, because the earle had diswadyd the king not to place his syster Margaret in maryage unto Charles soone to Phylip duke of Burgoygne, whom the earle hatyd worse than any man lyving, and for that king Edward wold not heare his advise, therfor this grudge to have growen betwixt them ; as who showlde say that a matter of so smaule importance could or ought to have alyenatyd the earle from hys liege lord ; and this ys a mere fabell of the common people : but let us returne to our purpose. The erle of Warweke beinge thus vexid in mynde, moovyd, and angry, least otherwise he might utterly overthrow him selfe and his devyse, determinyd therfor to dissemble and covertly beare all these injuryes, while that time might serve to bring his purpose to effect ; who havyng receavdyd soone after the kinges letters of returne, excusyd king Edward unto king Lewys as well as wold be for the alteration of his mynde, assigning the same after a sort unto loove, wherin was never any meane. And so returnyng into England, presentyd himself before the king in manner accustomed, and maybe report of his ambassage as well as he cowld, without any shew of greife conceavyd. After that, within few days, he departyd the court, by the kinges permission and leave, into his earldome, for the refresshing both of mynde and body, as he gave owt. That was the yere of our salvation mcccclxvij, and the sixth since king Edward began his raigne ; in which yere also, George Nevyll, broother to

E. 4. the
E. of War-
wick brake
into greate
termes of
hatred.

The E. of
Warwick
returns
out of
France.

1464.
[Sc. 1467.]

the earle, was placyd in the stede of William archebisshop of George,
York, lately deade, in rew of bisshops the Lijte. Also Phylip brother to
duke of Burgoygne dyed, whom Charles his soon succeedyd, a of War-
man both for haultynes of corage and martyall knowledge passing
excellent.

When Rycherd was arryvyd in his earldome of Warwicke, as we have already shewyd, he sent for his broothers, George archebisshop of York, and John marquise Montacute ; with them, after a day or two, he commonyd of dyvers matters ; and lastely, having gotten a fyt occasion to complayne upon the king, he impartyd to them his intente, exoorting them with many woordes and reasons to joigne with him in taking king Henryes part, and to help that he might be restoryd unto his kingdome ; sainge in this sort : ‘ Yt is no lightnes of mynde, from the which I am farre of, my well belooovyd broothers, that moveth me herein, but a settlyd jugement which I may now easily make of king Henry and Edward ; for he ys a most holy man, looving his fryndes intirely well, and thankfull for any benyfyt, who hath a soone, Edward by name, born to great renowme, bountynelnes, and lyberalytie, of whom every man may well looke for large recompense, whose care and travaile ys to releve his father in this calamytie. This on thother syde ys a man ready to offer injury, unthankfull, geaven wholly to folow sensualtie, and already shooning all honest exercyse ; who resolute maketh more honorable account of new upstart gentlemen than of the ancyent howses of noblytie ; wherfor ether must the noblytie destroy him, or els he wyll destroy them. But we especyaly who ar fyrst touchyd with displeasure must not put upp the matter ; for I beleve yow ar not ignorant how that, after he was once settlyd in the royll seat, he began at the first secretly and than openly to envy thonor of owre howse, and, one way or other, dayly to dymynyshe the same, as thowgh he had exaltd us unto that honor, and not we him to that royll powre and

brother to
the E. of
Warwicke,
made
arche-
busshope of
Yorke.

The E. of
Warwicke
related his
grefe to his
2 brotheres
& re-
solve to ad-
vaunce
H. 6.

authorytie ; and therfor, as concerning our late ambassage in France, we wer not accountyd upon, to thintent that thonorable renowme which we have gotten emongest all the noblytie of this land, partly by prowesse of owr parent, partly by owr owne tra-vaill, might be utterly dymynsshyd, defasyd, and in no reputation.'

The archebisshop adhered to the E. of Warwicke, but the marques Montagewe refused.

George duke of Clarence adheres to the E. of Warwick.

George duke of Clarence marries the earle of Warwickes daughter. The E. of Warwick retyres to Calis.

Tharchebisshop was with these perswations easly inducyd to be of his opynyon, but so was not the marquise, for he cowld never be movyd from the begynning to alow uppoun any practyse agaynst kinge Edward ; but in thende, whan therle of Warweke was promysed the ayd and assistance of many noble men, he was fynally drawen to joigne with the residew in that warre. After these thinges, therle of Warweke, being a man of most sharpe wit and forecast, conceaving before hand that George duke of Clarence was for soome secrete, I cannot tell what cause, alyenatyd in mynde from his broother king Edward, made fyrst unto him soome murmur and complaynt of the king, therby to proove him how he was affectyd ; then after whan the duke dyd to him the lyke, explaning many injuryes receavyd at his broothers handes, he was the more bold to enter into greater matters, and discoveryd to the duke his intent and purpose, praying him to joigne therein. And because ther showlde no suspicion of lyghtness aryse, he gave demonstration evydent how warely, perfytely, and peynfullly the same had bene ponderyd and revolvyd in mynde, exhorting him also to take care and consideration of so great a cause, wherby all thinges might be throwghly provyded for, examynyd, and after a sort assuryd ; fynally, after many faire promyses, he affyancyd unto the duke his doughter, which was then mareageable ; by whose perswation and request the duke was overcoome, and promysyd to do all thinges as he should think good. Thus therle of Warweke, having impartyd his practyse with the duke, determinyd to make returne unto Calice, wheroft as yeat he was captane, and ther kept his wyfe and chyldren : but to thintent that this so huge

sedition, wherewith England was tossyd and tormoylyd many yeres after, might once at the last have a begynning, he requyryd his brothers, tharchebysshop of York and the marquys, to procure soome uprore to be made in Yorkshyre, anone after his departure, so that cyvill warre might be commencyd the while he was farre absent. These thinges thus determyned and his devyses approvyd, therle transportyd with the duke unto Calyee; and here, after the duke had sworne never to breake the promyse which he had made, therle placyd unto him in maryage his eldest daughter, Isabel, betrouwthyd to the duke as is before sayd; which busynes dispachyd, they began both two to delyberate more depely, and to conferre betwixt them selves of the maner and meanes howe to deale in this warre. Whan in the meane time, as had bene apoynted, an huge stere arose in Yorkshyre, begun upon a wickyd and ungodly cause. Ther was at York an auncyent and welthy xenodochye, that ys to say, an hospytall dedicatyd to St. Leonard, wher powre and nedye people wer enterteynyd, and the sicke relevydyd. To this holy howse all the whole provynce dyd, for devotion sake, geave yerely certane quantitie of wheat and first fruytes of all graynes, to serve thuse of the powre, which quantyty of corne thusbandmen, by provokement and instigation of certane headesmen of therles faction, as the report went, first denied to geave, alledging that the thinge geaven was not bestowyd upon the powre but upon the riche, and rewlers of the place; aftirward, whan the proctors of the sayd hospytall dyd urge the same earnestly at ther handes, they mayd an affray upon them; by which occasion secret assemblies and conspyracyes further grew, so that within few days wer gatheryd togythers about xv^{ten} thowsand men, who in battayle arraye marchyd spedely towardes York. Whan the frequent fame of so great commotion came to the towne, all things wer replenysshed with a wonderus fearc, the eyteeyns, casting in mynd carefully what best was to be done.

An assem.
blye of
15000 came
to the gates
of York
and dis-
comfyted.

doone, contynewyd as men mutually amasyd therwith, and uncertaine whether yt should be better to yssew owt agaynst the rage of this rural rowt, or to kepe the towne, and expulse ther forces from the waules. But the marquise, lyuetenant of that countrie for the king, delyveryd the cytie of that feere, who, taking a very fyf way for avoyding of further danger, encownteryd with the commons as they came at the very gates of the towne, wher, after long fyght, he tooke ther captane Robert Hulderne, and furthwith stroke of his heade, which when he had doone he causyd all his army to retire from the battayle, very late in the night, and withdrew them into the towne. But the people, no whyt appallyd, but rather enragyd with the death of ther captane, passing bye Yorke, whiche, without ordinance, and other engynes of warre they could not assalt, marchyd towardes London, myndyng to set all in uprore. And as touching that the marquise executed the captane of the commons, whom his owne confederates in conspyracye had sturryd up, the cause semeth to have bene, for that he might therby cloke and cover his intent, ether els because he had already resolvyd in mynde to hold with king Edward, with whom (as afterward appearyd) he joignyd in mutuall benevolence. But the king, who now began evydently to espy and conceave the secrete practyses of therle of Warweke, and of his brother the duke of Clarence, according as he had before suspectyd, after that he had intellygence, by often message and letters sent to him with all spedē possyble, how that mayne multitude marchyd with banner displayed towardes London, he sent agaynst them furthwith William Harbert, whom two yere before he had created earle of Peinbrowghe, with a mightie hoste of Walshemen, geaving him in charge, yf oportunyte should any wher serve, to fyght with them. The earle, using great celertyc, found the Yorkshire men encampyd not farre from Northampton, wher he also pightchyd his tents, and the next day after gave them battayll, wherin he was

Robarte
Hulderne
beheaded.

The re-
beles
marched
towards
London.

quikly discomfytyd. The Yorkeshyremen, well satisfyed with this fortunate fyght, waxed soodaynly more coole, and therefor pro-
 cedyd no further forward, but loden with pray drew homeward, com-
 mynding to stay whyle therle of Warweke should coome to them ; shire men
 who not long after, togyther with the duke of Clarence, his soon
 in law, hearing of that commotion, had departyd from Calyece, and
 was now arryvyd, muche commanding the captanes of the com-
 mons, congratulatyng the victory to all the soldiers in generall, of Cl-
 and with all dyligence preparyd an army. The king, nothing rence and
 appallyd with therle of Pembrowghs late overthrow, sent him aryved
 agane with suche supply as for releyf of the present necessytie he from Callis.
 had in readynes to make head against the enemy ; himself with a few foloweth after, who, that he might be preparyd at all assays, Pembroke
 contynewally, as he went, encreasyd his forces all that he might sente
 with the people of his faction reparyng to him plentifully ; he pro-
 fessyd openly that he went to extirp the rase of pernicious parsons. But the earle of Warweke, whan he had intelligence of
 thenemyes approche, sent with owt lingering unto the duke of Clarence, who was hard by with an army, that he wold bring his forces unto him, signyfying withall that the day of battayle was at hand. Uppon this message the duke reparyd furthwith to the earle, and so they both having joygnyd ther forces marchyd to a village caulyd Banbery, wher they understoode ther enemyes to be encampyd. Ther was a feyld fowghte. Therle of Pembrowghe which the
 was taken, all his army slane and discomfytyd. Emongest this number was killyd Rycherd earl Ryvers, father to Elyzabeth the quene, and his soone John Vedevill. King Edward came after the *Udevilla*. same day a lyttle before night with a smaule army, and, hearing of the slaughter of his people, stayed about fyve myles from the village. Therle of Warweke returnyd with his victoryus army unto his owne towne, wher, within two days after, therle of Pem- brough, with thother nobles taken in the conflict, was belieadyd. *The E. of Pembroke and others executed.*

In the mean time they began to entreat of a pacification, for the concludinge wherof messengers passyd often to and fro, from the king to therle, and from therle to the king; so that the king was now browght in hope of attonement, and by reason therof nether tooke convenient hede to his owne affayre, nether fearyd any owtward annoyance from thennemy, as though all the matter had been endyd. Wherupon therle of Warweke, conceaving by

E. 4 taken
by nighte
and sent to
Myddham
Castle in
Yorksh.

espyalls what possybylyte he had to achieve soome fortunate exployt, approchyd the kinges camp as secretly as he could in the night, and having kyllyd the watche and ward tooke the king at unwares, whom he brought with him to Warweke, and from thence, to deceave the kinges frindes, he sent him by secret journeys in the night season to bee kept at Myddleham Castle in Yorkshire; but no place was so farre distant whyther as the fame of the kinges apprehention dyd not reache, which made many men tremble and quake for feare. Howbeyt, when the king was prysoner in the castle he began to speake fayre unto the constable and keperes therof, to make request unto them, and to put them in so great hope of rewards, that, corruptyd with his plentyfull and large promyses, they let him go; yeat notwithstanding the rumor was spred that the same was doone by therles assent, which had bene credyble yf therle had afterward layd armor apart; but in dede yt was the unfortunacy of king Henry, for surely hereby might every man perceave perfytely that the synale faule of his howse was at hand, which cowld not be shoonnyd nether by polleyey nor powre humane; suche perchance was the will of God; for therle of Warweke and his frindes, for the speciall ayd, defence, and preservation of king Henry alone, objected ther parsons to perill, consumyd ther substance, as men assuryd so long as king Edward lyvyd that nether they nor king Henry could beare the sway, and yeat, being in ther handes, they sufferyd him to escape. Thus may we see that whan our causes ar utterly to decay,

E. 4 es-
caped out
of prisone.

soometyme feare, soometyme folyshe hardynes, soomtime madnes, soomtyme melancholy, bereaveth us of all wyt, sense, and understanding.

But king Edward, being thus delyveryd from thand of his enemyes, got himself incontynent to York, wher he was plausyblly receavyd of the cytecyne, and stayed two days in the towne to levy and arme soome force of soldiers; but whan he was not hable to make up ther a mete army, and that he was resolvyd to passe to London throwgh the myddest of his enemyes, he went from thence to Lancaster, wher William Hastings, his lord chamberlane, than lay. Heare by thayde of this William his powr was augmentyd, wherwithall being furnyshed he cam safe to London; and not to omyt any carefulnes, travale, nor cownsell, that mete was for his availle in this troublesom time, he regardyd nothing more than to wyn agane the frendship of suche noble men as wer now alyenatyd from him, to confyrme the goodwyll of them who wer hovering and unconstant, and to reduce the mynde of the multy-tude, being browght by these innovations into a murmooring and dowbtfulnes what to do, unto ther late obedycence, affection, and goodwill towrdes him. But whan therle of Warweke and the duke understood that king Edward was escapyd by trechery of ther owne folkes, and that all ther former practyses wer in a moment commyd to nought, they ragyd, fretyd, and fumyd extremely, and by and by assembling togatheres ther noblemen, they enteryd into conference agane, searchyng owt the pollycy and dryft of ther enemys, that they myght enterpryse ther warres of new, which when the king was taken they thowght to have bene fynysshed. These princes wer muche encoragyd because very many who lyked better of discord than of peace offeryd to serve freely in this new warre. The king also made preparation for the lyke with no lesse diligence than his enemyes, ether to bring home into unytie and obedycence or utterly to destroy his adversaryes, that

all men might once at the last lyve as for them in tranquyllty and peace.

Thus was the state of the realme, by reason of intestyne hatryd and dyvysyon emongst the nobles, most myserable, for churches and houses wer every wher spoylyd, swoord and fyre ragyd all over, the realme was wholy replenyssed with harnesse and weapon, and slaughter, bloode, and lamentation; the feildes wer wastyd, towne and cytie stervyd for hunger, and many other mischiefes happenyd, which proeceede commonly from the rage of warres; for which causes many of the noblytie ptyyed the ruyne of the comonwelth, and therefore delte diligently as well with the king as with therle of Warweke and the duke for reconciliation, perswading soomtymes thone, soomtymes thother, rather to revolve with themselves thankfully the benyfytes receavyd than wrothfully to revenge the late injuryes and to caule to remembrance that seeing yt ys an heynous offence not to releve owr parentes, muche more is yt detestable to subvert and by contentyon to ruynate our countre, the common parent of all, seking, by these meanes, to take owt of the way and fynally once abolishe this intestine deadly dyvision. Both thauthorytie and also intreatie of the noblytie so movyd the mynde of the king and earle, that, uppon mutuall promise of assurance made, the earle himself and the duke of Clarence came to London, gardyd with a slender crew of soldyers in respect of so great danger, and had at Westmynster long talke with the king concerning composytion; but both parties wer so replenyshyd with ire, that in thend nothing touching peace could be concludyd; and so the king went to Canterbury to vysyte the shryne of Saint Thomas, for performance of his vow. The earle and duke departyd to Warweke, and in Lincolnshyre prepartyd a new army, wherof he made captane Robert Welles knight, soone of Richerd Wells, an expert and valyant man of warre. The newys hereof wer caryed spedely to London, wherwithall the king armye.

The duke
of Clarence
and E. of
Warwicke
came to
London to
treate with
the king of
peace, but
nothing
done.
Roberte
Welles,
captene of
the duke
and E.
armye.

was vehemently moovyd, whose hope was his enemyes wold rather condiscend to soome maner conditions of peace than any more to make warre ; but the more the rumore therof encreasyd, contrary to his expectation, the more spedly dyd he muster owt and levy an armye, and incontynent sent sundry and often messages for Rycherd Welles to repare unto him. Wherunto Richard first excusyd himself by reason of debylytie, want of helth, and other busynesses ; afterward, when his excuse wold not be admyttyd, he rode to London, and browght with him Thomas Dymock, knight, who had maryed his sister ; but having intelligence ther by his frindes that the king was highly offendyd with him, he fled in hast as a man in great feare with the sayd Thomas into the saintuary at Westmynster, meaning ther to tary untill the kinges ire should be asswagyd. Kyng Edward, who hopyd to suppresse this uprore without force of armes, gave his fayth and promyse for ther safeties, and caulyd them unto him owt of sayntuary. They uppon the kings promyse cam ; than the king commandyd Rychard to will his soone Robert to leave of the warre, and, in the meane time having his forces in readyness, marched on agaynst his enemyes, leading with him the sayd Rycherd and Thomas ; and whan he cam within two days journey of the towne of Stamfoorth, wher the camp of his enemyes lay, he understood that Robert, nothing moovyd with his father's letters, contynewyd styl in armes ; whereat, taking great indignation, he caused as well the sayd Richerd as Thomas, contrary to fayth and promyse geaven, and to the woorst example that might be, to have ther heades stryke of from ther shoulders. But whan Robert perceavyd the king approche, and understande that his father, with Thomas aforesayd, wer executyd, he withdrew himself to the next village caulyd Edgecote ; ther he stode a whyle in dowt whether he showld fyght or no, because yt was a matter of great hazard to fight with so great forces before therle of Warwekes arryvall ; but at the last,

Richard
Welles and
Thomas
Dymock
fled to
London.

Richerd
Wells and
Tho. Di-
mooke
beheaded.

The batle
of Edg-
cote ;
the kinge
wone the
feeld, and
tooke
Robarte
Welles and
Thomas
Delalaunde
and shortly
after cutt
off their
heades.
Delalante.

uppon confydence of youthly corage, he arrayed his host furthwith and came into the fielde. The fyght was mayntaynyd certane howres with great devoyr, many being killyd on both sydes; in thend, while that Robert travaleth with earnest affection to kepe his men in order, beinge came at the poynte to fly, he was envyronyd of his enemyes and taken, togethers with Thomas de la land, knight, and many others; after whose apprehensyon all tharmy was dryven bak and dyscomfytid. Whan the king had gotten this victory, he put to death by and by the said Robert and Thomas, and dyvers others. The report ys that abowt x^m. men were kylled in that conflict.

The earle of Warweke who was than at hys owne towne aboutward to come very shortly unto the camp, after he had intellygence that battayle was joignyd sooner than he wold have wenyd, and that his partie had the overthrow, nowtwithstanding he had smaule confydence in his affayres, yeat thowght he yt necessary to dissemble the matter, for that often times in the warres dissimulation serveth the turne better than plane dealing; wherfor to thintent he might mynster occasion of comforth to his company, being in utter despere, and eaven at the poynt of flight, not by woord only, but also by soome matter in deedle, he began therfor busily to prepare new supply, and laboryd withall to induce, by many fayre promyses, Thomas lord Stanley to be of his faction; which when he could not compasse, seeing that Thomas flatly denayed to beare armes agaynst king Edward, than fynally seinge yt was to no purpose to wast any more tyme, and despcearyng that he should be hable to cownter the force of his enemyes, he, with the duke of Clarence, his soone in law, departyd to Excester, and,

Thomas
lord Stan-
ley refused
to joyne
with the
earle of
Warwick.

The duke
& the earle
of War-
wick flye
into
France.

whyle he stayed ther a few days, having no store of suche thinges as wer mete for the warre, he resolvyd to go unto Lewys the Frenche king, as soone as might bee, whose frendfship he had gotten a few yeres before, the whyle he lay with him as ambassa-

dor, uppon hope ether to get ayd of him, or els incense him agaynst king Edward; and in the meane time he hyryd for that voyage shippes on every syde wher he could get them, causing them to be brought into the haven caulyd Dertmouth, which shippes not long after he furnysshdyd with artillery and other thinges necessary, and therin they two, with ther wifes and great number of ther retynew, saylyd with the first fayre wynde into Normandy, wher the lyvetenant of that regyon entertaynyd them honorably, and anon advyrtyasd king Lewys of therle of Warwekes arryal. King Lewys had already the earle of Warwyke in so great admyratyon for the fame of his noble actes, as that he wissid nothing more than to gratify the man; wherfor, understanding that he was landyd in France, he sent with great rejoysing certane noble men to mete him, and commandyd them to say unto the earle, that he had long wissyd occasion wherby to helpe him, and the same now offeryd he wold not omyt, requyring therfor him, with the duke his soone, to take the paine to coome unto him at Amboye (that is a maner of the kinges, sytuate upon the ryver of Loire), for the matter showld so faule owt as they should never repent them of that travaille. This flight of therle of Warweke happenyd in the ixth yeere of king Edwardes raigne, and of man's salvation M.eccclxx^{tie}. King Edwardes care was much aug- 1470. mentyd by reason of the flight of his adversaryes, for that thabsence of therle causyd all men to long dayly more and more to se him agane, as men who thought themselves bereft of the soone in this world; so famous was the name of this man amongst the commonaltie as that they had nothing in more reputatyon, extollyd nothings with more highe commendation. What shall we say to that, the common people had none other song in ther mouths whan so ever they wer disposyd publykly to make disport and be mery. Wherby yt came to passe that therles faction was within few days augmentyd woonderfully. Wherfor the king was

vexid two maner of ways, for he fearyd his enemy both abrode and at home ; but princypally he thought yt mete to beware of therles returne. And therfor, with all spedē possyble, he sent messengers to Charles duke of Burgoigne, who (as we have before shewyd) had maryed his sister Margaret, requyring him, for that he was in league with the Frenche, to advyse king Lewys not to ayde, nether with men nor money, therle of Warwycke and duke of Clarence, enemyes to king Edward his felow in amytie, and by most sure bond of affynytie his allye. Duke Charles dyd not onely accomplishe the same request owt of hand, but also threatenyd king Lewys if he showld assist them. But the Frenche king thought those woordes so lyttle to be regardyd, as indeed he dyd contemne them, awnswering therunto, that he both might, without breache of league, and wold also ayd his frindes, and especcially those who wer famouse for ther noble factes, of which company the earle of Warwicke was one, the doing wherof should be nether cost nor charge to the duke. When the newys hereof was browght into England, they mayd kinge Edward very sadde, and browght him muche more cause of care, in so muche that by examynation and torture of them who wer in warde he sought owt dyligently who wer frindes to his adversaryes ; by occasion wherof

Divers nobble men, for feare of the king, fledd to sanctuary. yt came to passe that right many, fearing the woorst, partly fled into sayntuary, partly submyttd themselves to the king ; of this number was John marquise Montacute, who yealdyd agane, and gave himself upp wholy to the frendship and partie of king Edward, whome he receavyd with muche curtesy and in the fayrest maner, to thintent he might therby allure the hartes and amytie of others.

In this meane whyle therle of Warwicke and the duke rode to Amboye, for the seing of whom all the way as he went people resortyd in great number, so muche frequentyd was the fame of this nobleman, yea emongest the Frenche men. Whan he cam thyther

he was curtesly and sumptuously receavyd of king Lewys, unto whom he, by long discours, discoveryd the cause of his cooming. King Lewys, no lesse enamoryd and delighted with the presence of his frind than before with his renownyd fame, promysyd that he showld want nothing wherwithall he was hable to help him.

Not long after arryvyd ther also Margarete, wyfe to king Henry, Queene Margarete with Edward his soone, prince of Wales, Jaspar earle of Pembroke, and John earle of Oxfoord, who a lytle before had passyd over to quene Margarete. Heare, after they had conferryd of many matters touching ther owne safty, they grew finally, by meane of king Lewys, to the maner of making a league. Fyrst of all, Anne dowghter to therle of Warwick, whom he had browght over with him, was affyancyd to prince Edward; after that, the earle and duke promysyd by othe not to surcease the warres before the kingdom of England showld be restoryd to kinge Henry or Edward his soone; fynally, the quene and prince swore to make therle and duke protectors of the commonwelth, so long to contynew that office till the prince showld be mete and fytt by himself to undertake that charge; and all these thinges they promysyd in most religyouse and devout maner to kepe inviolate. Many moe condytions wer entreatyd upon emongest them, which both the reason and weyght of the cause requyrd. This league thus concludyd, king Lewys grantyd to thearle of Warwick armor, men, and navy, wherwithall being furnishshed he might the safeler repare into England. Also Rhenate, quene Margaretes father, helpyd the same what he myght. Now was ther musteryd and apoyntyd an army of no smaule account; the navy lay ready at anchore in the mouth of Seyne, when as the earle receavyd letters from his frindes in England, signyfying that the people unyversally throwghout the realme dyd so muche looke, hope, and long for his returne into England that they wer already every wher in armes, awayting his

arryvall, willing him therfor to make haste, yea thowghe yt wer withoutt any army, for as soone as he shoulde set foote a land many thowsands of men wold repare to hym thyther furthwith, (as afterward happenyd in dede) to folow his direction in all poyntes, and that the comons wer wholy thus affectyd; yea more-over that many noble men also wer right ready to mynster money, munytion and mayntenance of vyctwall to that warre, and with hand and hart to help the same. Whan the erle had receavyd those letters he was woonderus glad, and, determinyng not to omitt so great possybylytic of well dooing, when quene Margarete with her soon could not be as yeat ready for that voyage, he and the duke with the erles of Oxfoord and Pembrough determinynd with part of the host and navy to go before and geave the first adventure, which yf yt should well succeede, than the quene with the prince might follow after. Therle of Warwicke therfor, thinking the matter was to be delt in withoutt delay and put in execu-tion furthwith, after that he had extollyd as muche as he could with most humble thankes the benyfyte of king Lewys towrdes king Henry and himself, and was permittyd by the king to depart, came, togyther with the duke and other his assocayates, unto his navy, and shipping his men directyd his course into England. During this season Charles duke of Burgoigne, grevyd in mynde that thearle, having receavyd ayd of the Frenche king, should conduct an army against king Edward, dyd dispose alongest the coste of Normandy a great navy of ships to intercept him by the way; but therle, without any damage receavyd by the dukes navy, arryvyd with his company safe in the haven of Dertmouth, from whence six months before he had transportyd into France. Whan his people wer set on land, he causyd proclamatyon to be made in the name of king Henry the sixth, that all men, who might for age, shoulde arme themselves agaynst Edward duke of York, who presently contrary to right and law usurpyd the kyngdom: wher-

The E. of
Warwick
and his
companye
arrived out
of France.

uppon yt ys uncredible to speake how quickly the brute of therles arryvall was spred throught all partes of the land, and at the fyrist newys therof, what thowsands of armyd men came to him at once. Whan therle was furnysshid with so great forces, he marchyd towardes London. But whien king Edward knew of therles approche he was presently past all hope of hablytic to defend him selfe; and, therfor, supposing yt best to reserve thuttermost of hys devoyr untill soone better time to coome, he myndyd not the levying of an army wherwith to withstand his adversaryes, but, carefull for his owne safty, went with Richerd his broother duke of Gloucester unto Lynne, a toune uppon the sea coaste, and, ther fyndyng a ship ready to make sayle and passe the seas, he saylyd into Flanders to duke Charles with a rowghe and tempestuouse gale of wynde, and for that not without great danger of lyfe. Elyzabeth his wyfe, great with chylde at the same time, fled into Westminster and ther tooke sayntuary, wher she brought forth a soone whom she cawlyd Edward. When the flying of king Edward was knownen abrode, therle made more haste, and without all resystance came to London, and set the cyty in peace, trubblyd as than with a commotion of the Kentishemen, who abowt the tyme of kinge Edwardes departure had spoylyd the suburbs; for which benyfyt he was more welcome to all men. From thence he went to the towr, and delyveryd king Henry owt of prysyon, whom he browght in his royll apparell throwghe the middest of the eytye, accompanied first with Richard Lee, lord mayre of the towne, and the two shyryffes, Robert Draper and Richard Gardener, than with the whole cowncell of the cytie, unto the chirche of St. Paule, the people on the right and left hand rejoysing with clapping of hands, and cryng, God save king Henry. And then for thys good successe, which happenyd according to his hartes desyre, therle gave thankes to God. This yere wherin king Henry was restoryd to his kingdom was of our salvation M.cccc.lxxi.

King E.
-4 and Ric.
his brother
fled into
Flanders.

Elyzabethe
wyfe to E.
-4, fled to
the sanctuary.

II. 6 sette
at libertye
out of the
towre.

The second
Raigne of
H. 6.

Thus king Henry, so often before conqueryd, begann agane to raigne, and after these doinges abowt the 6th calendes of December held a parlyament at Westmynster; wherin first of all king Edward was proclaymd traytor to his countre, because he had usurpyd the crowne, and all his possessions wer confyscate; lyke sentence was geaven uppon all them who tooke his parte, and also yt was enacted that all such captyves as wer of his faction should suffer condigne punysshement. Moreover, all thinges decreyd, enactyd, and doone by king Edward were abrogatyd. Lastely, therle of Warwicke, as one who had well deservyd of his country, was mayd protector of the realme, with whom was joynyd in commission the duke of Clarence. Thus was the state of the

Jo. mar-
ques
Mountague
pardoned.

commonwelth alteryd and becoome new. John marquise Montacute came to that parlyament, who, purgyng his fawlt by long discours that his late inclyning to king Edwardes syde was for feare of lyfe onely, obtayned pardon that as he dyd the same unwillingly, so he should never afterward do his frinds good, for yf he had stand fast with king Edward lesse harme undoutydly showld he have doone being an open enemy than a faynyd frynd, seing that the thynges we beeware of very seldome or not muche annoy. But quene Margaret every day, after that day wherin therle of Warwicke departyd into England, trublyd in mynde with incertane expectation of theevent, ceassyd not to prey humbly unto God for victory; wherof fynally, after intellygence had by letters from hir husband, she anon after with Edward hir soone tooke shipping, and assayd to sayle into England. But because the wynter was sharp and stormy, she was by force of tempest dryven bak agane unto the land, and constreynyd to differre hir voyage unto an other time. During the same season Jaspar earle of Pembrowghe returnyd into Wales to his earledome, wher he found Henry, soone to his brother Edmund earle of Richemond, not fully x. yeres owld, kept as prysoner, but honorably browght up with

Henry E.
of Rich-
mond
broughte
up in
Wales.

the wyfe of William Harbert, who (as we have before remembryd) had bene by king Edward created earle of Pembrowghe, and after taken in battaylle was by commandment of therle of Warwicke beheadyd. This chylde dyd his mother Margaret, thonely dowghter of John first duke of Soomerset, bring foorth whan she was scarce $xiiij^{ten}$ yeres owld, who thowghe afterward she maryed to Henry soone to Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and thirdly to Thomas earle of Darby, yeat never had any mo chyldren, as one thinking yt sufficient for hir to have browght into this world one onely, and suche a soone. And so Jaspar tooke the boy Henry from the wyfe of the lord Harbert, and browght him with himself a lyttle after whan he cam to London unto king Henry. Whan the king saw the chylde, beholding within himself without speache a prety space the haultie disposition therof, he ys reportyd to H. 6 prognosticated
have sayd to the noble men ther present, ‘This trewly, this is he the succes
unto whom both we and our adversaryes must yeald and geave of H. 7.
over the domynion.’

Thus the holy man shewyd yt woold coome to passe that Henry showlid in time enjoy the kingdom.

In this very yeare (that I may remember in dew place the thing which above in my ixth. booke I sayd that I would not omitt) Sixtus the iiiijth. bysshopp of Rome, advertysyd from James the iii^d. king of Scotland that the bysshops therof had no prymate whom they might consult concerning religion, by reason of the eyvill warres in England, and being requyryd to provyde as mete was for the same, did creat the bisshop of saint Andrewys prymate of all Scotland, that, by reason of tumultes both intestyne and forreyn which often arose betwene both nations, the bisshops themselves should not be sayd to want an head; althowgh Richerd Nevell archbysshop of York made muche labor to the contrary. And to the sayd prymate he made subject the bysshopps of Glasco, Rosse, Brechen,
Candida-
casæ, Lis-
moreensem,
Sodoren-
sem.

Moray, Orchaney, and Sodorne. This byssshops see was placeyd in thile of Man, which ys thought to be of the diocesse of York.

Whyle these thinges were doing otherwher, king Edward, thowgh he wer owt of his country, yeat dyd he not despeare but to have shortly a very fyt and convenient time for recovery agane of the kingdome ; for partly the duke of Burgoigne promysyd him great ayd, partly he was laboryd dayly to returne by letters and messengers from those of his faction ; and contynually right many, ether for feare of lawys, or for envye of the present state, and desyrys of lybertye to lyve as them lyst, fled to him owt of England, urging him more and more to that journey. With these fayre promyses king Edward was so insensyd that he thowght yt shame to tary one day longer, and covetyd nothinge more than to fly over in all hast; wherfor whan he had gatheryd togythers scarce two thowsand men, and preparyd a few shipps, at the beginning of the spring he transportyd into England, and arryvyd upon the coaste of Yorkeshyre at an haven caulyd Ravensporne. Heare, setting his men on land, he consultyd with his captanes whither he might first go, for, consydering his smaule number of soldiers, he cowld not conceave which way to passe in saftie sufficient. After long consultation they thowght yt best to send owt certane light horsemen abrode into the countrye adjoyning, to try the good will of the rurall people, whether they wold ryse with king Edward or no. These men rode furth and dyd ther diewtie with great diligence. Trewly yt ys not lyke that king Edward, being a wyse man, wold have enterprysyd to enter England with so smaule forces except he had knownen to receave great help owt of hand ; by which reason, yt ys not to be dowtyd but the duke of Clarence was even than secretly reconcylyd unto him, and that the marquise also Montacute was becoome his partaker, wherof afterward the shew was evydent. But the scurryers, who wer sent to fele as far as might bee how the people wer affectyd, returnyd the next

E. 4 arived
again in
England.

George
duke of
Clarence
and John
marques
Montague
adheare to
E. 4.

day folowing unto king Edward, and made report that all the countrye ther held firmly with king Henry, and that yt should be but in vane to labor them any further, for thowghe they had bene earnestly in hand with many to joigne with him, yeat not one man durst enter in any talk therof for feare of therle of Warwick. Which whan king Edward knew he alteryd hys purpose of necessytie, and wher at the first he made report that he demandyd the crowne, now he causyd yt to be blowen abrode that he sowght onely for his dukedom of Yorke, to thintent that by this reasonable and rightewouse request he might get more favor at all handes. And yt ys incredible to be spoken how great effect that feygnyd matter was of, suche ys the force of righteousnes generally among all men; for whan they herd that king Edward myndyd nothing lesse than to require the kingdom, and sowght simply for his inherytance, they began to be movyd ether for pyty to favor him, or at the leest not to hinder him at all from thattayning of that dukedome. Thus, having fownd owt the meane how to mollyfye or gather unto him the good will of the people, king Edward purposyd to go to York, and went first to Beverley. Whan therle of Warwycke, who at those very days lay at Warwycke, had intelligence that king Edward was returnyd into England, and marchyd towards Yorke, he sent letters by post streight way to his broother Montacute, who had wynteryd at Powntfrayt with no smaule army of soldiers, certfyng him how great the danger was if thenemy should attayne York, and commandyng him ether to mete and fyght with him by the way, or to stay his passage unto suche time as he himselfe should shortly coome with more forces, which he was gatheryng with all dylgence. And because he was not sure by which part of Yorkshyre his enemyes wold journey, therfor first he sent perfyte woord by post, and commandment in the kings name to every particuler towne of York-

shire, and than to Yorke ytself, that all men should be in armes, and to shutt the gates agaynst king Edward.

E. 4 came
towards
Yorke.

In the meane season king Edward approchid York without resistance, which whan the cytecyns knew, they, by and by, taking weapon in hand came to defend the gates, and sent two chyfe men of the cytye to mete and requyre him in all ther names not to coome any nearer, nor to object himself to hazard, for they wer amyndyd to repulse him all maner of ways by force of armes. Whan king Edward had herd the messengers he was no lyttle trubblid in mynde, and these thinges molestyd him most of all, least, yf he should retyre, the country people would pursew him for desyre of spoyle; again, yf he should procede, that the cytecynes sallyng owt wold coompassē him rownd abowt; wherfor supposing yt best not to deale by vyolence, but in most curtes maner, he most hartely besechyd the messengers to say unto the cytecynnes in his name that he came not to demand the crowne of England, but his awneyent inherytance of the dukedom of York, and therfor requyryd them to assyst ther duke, who, yf he might by ther good help recover the same, he wold never fergit the benyfyt thegof; and so with fayre speaches he dismyssyd them home, and wythall drew nere to the gates in good order of battaill. The cytecynes wer soomwhat softenyd with king Edwardes aunswere, for that he semyd, as he sayd, to purpose no practyse agaynst king IHenry; and therfor they commounyd with him from the waule, requyring him to depart, which yf he wold do without delay they affirmyd he showlde receave no damage; yf he wold not, they tould him he was in danger of his lyfe. But he gave curtesse speaches to every of tholder men and rewlers by name, cawling them worshippfull and grave magistrates, he made them many fayre promyses, and besowght them to suffer him to be safe in his owne towne. Thus the whole day almost was spent in this

parley ; at the last the cyttees, uppon hope of benyfyt so bountifully promysed, came to composyton, that yf king Edward wold geave his othe to entartayne the cyttees curtesly, and from thenceforth to be obedient and faythfull to king Henry, they wold both receave him into the towne and helpe him to ther powre. With these condytyons king Edward was joyfully contentyd, so that the next day very early in the morning, *whyle a pryst sayd masse* at the gate wherby he was to enter the towne, he *among the holy mysteryes* promysyd by othe, devoutly and reverently, *inter sacra.* Facta per sacerdotem re divina inter sacra. to observe both two, and so he was receavyd into the towne ; who, notwithstanding, was so farre from having any minde to observe thone (according as furthwith after appearyd evydent) that he resolvyd to regard eaven nothing more than to persecute king Henry, and to thrust him from the possession of his kingdom. Thus oftentimes as well men of highe as of low cawling blyndyd with covetousnes, and forgetting all religyon and honesty, ar woont to make promyse in swearing by thimmortal God, which promyse nevertheless they ar already determinyd to breake before they make yt. Of this matter yt shall not yrk me to make mentyon in the lyfe of king Richerd the third in place convenient, wher perchaunce yt may be well conceavyd that thisew of king Edward did partycypate also the fault of this perjury. The stere of the people thus pacyfyed, king Edward enteryd into York, and, all memory of his othe put apart, he fortyfyed the towne with garryson, least any innovation might grow therin ; he also augmentyd his forces, and whan they wer ready, hearing that his adversaryes wer slow in ther dealings, he supposyd yt so muche the more necessary for him to make hast, wherfor he set forward towards London, and, omytting of purpose the right way that ledeth to Pountfreyt, wher we have before sayd that the lord Montacute with an host lay, he turnyd owt towardes the right hand scarce fowre myles from the camp of his enemyes,

E. 4 tooke
an oathe
which he
mente to
breake.

which whan he had passyd without any head mayd agaynst him by thenemy, he returnyd into the right way agane, a lyttle beyond the place of ther camp, and marchyd furth to Notingham. But this heynous fact of king Edward muche moved the cyttees of York to anguyshe and sorow, for they wer ashamyd to have bene deceavyd so pretly, I will not say unhonestly.

But whan yt was brutyd abrode that king Edward was coomyd to Notingham without any damage receavyd, than the chief and headesmen every wher began to revolt to him, as they who thowght that ether the marquise wold not set uppon his enemyes because he held with them, ether els that he durst not marche out of his camp because he was inferyor to them in force, and therfor they demyd yt more safe to joigne with king Edward, being now furnished with a mayne army, than with danger to defend the quarell of king Henry. King Edward also encoragyd with this successe removyd his camp quickly to Leycester, wher he had intelligence that therle was at Warweke, and that John earle of Oxforth was coomyd thyther to him with a large company of soldyers, both two to make head agynst him ; who, thinking to prevent that matter, determinyd to depart thyther with his whole hoste, hoping ether to encounter with them in the field, ether els to joigne with his broother duke of Clarence, whom he thought to mete sooniwher, as he was alreadie on his way marching with an army from London, before he shoulde coome unto his late confederates, least otherwyse he might be brought from the mynde he was now in, because he knew the duke was not very constant. The erle of Warweke trewly was in the meane tyme heavy in hert, and much trubblid, that wheras he had polytykly provydyd for all thinges, yeat the marquise had not onely not reparyd thyther wher his enemyes began first to raise forces, according as he had bene advisyd, but also had sufferyd them with so smaule powre to passe by him unfowghten withall. Wherfor that he might in time convenient

joigne battaille with thenemy, who as a ryver augmentyd his forces in going, he gathereth powr for every hand, and causeth the duke of Clarence to be sent for in all hast, who was levying an army at London. But whan he perceavyd the duke to linger, and do all things negligently as a man dowtfull whether it wer warre or peace, eaven than suspectyng that he was corruptyd by his brootherers ; he marchyd forward with his forces furthwith unto Coventry, to thintent he might encounter thenmy as he came. Emong these E. 4 sur-
matters king Edward came to Warwicke, and took yt, being v oyd prises the
of garrison ; from thence he marchyd agaynst the erle, and en- town of
campyd himself nigh unto him, and the next day after his arryvall Warwicke.
ther he browght furth his men in battaille array, and offeryd therle
the feylde, who, suspecting himself to be betrayed by the duke, as
we have before sayd, kept within the waules ; and in this meane
whyle woord was browght that the duke himself was at hand with
an huge army ; which when king Edward understoode, he raisyd
his camp and went to mete the duke. Howbeyt, because yt showld
not seme soome subtle practyse concludyd betwixt them two, he
marchid in good order of battaylle, as one that myndyd to fight.
The duke dyd the lyke. But whan they came within view thone
of thother, Richerd duke of Glocestre, as thowghe he had bene
apoyntyd arbyter of all controversy, first conferryd seeretly with
the duke ; than he returnyd to king Edward, and dyd the very E. 4 and
same with him. Fynally, not warre but peace was in every mans George
mouth ; than, armor and weapon layd apart upon both sydes, the duke of
brootherers gladly embracyd one an other. Clarence
meete and
joyne
together.

After this king Edward commandyd proclamation to be made in E. 4 at the
the same place, that the duke and his adherents should be frely same time
pardonyd for ever. They thought good also to move the earle of published
Warwick to revolt, unto whom the duke had sent of his fryndes by procla-
certane noble men, first to excuse his fact, than to exhort him that mation the
he would, whyle he might, make soome composytion with king same
agreem^t.

Edward. Whan therle had herd the duke's message, first he accusyd and cryed owt upon him, that, contrary to his faith and promise geaven, he had in suche shamefull maner fled unto king Edward. Than, as touching his message, he gave none other awnser but that he had rather be lyke himself than a false duke, and that therfor he wold not surease the warre tyll ether he had lost his lyfe or wer revengyd upon his ennemyes. From thence king Edward, having his forces thus mightyly encreasyd, set forward with assuryd confydence towards London, whyther whan the newys came that the duke of Clarencee was reconeylyd to his broothers, and they altogytter wer a coomming to the cytie, suche trembling feare moovyd the cytecynes as that they knew not which way to turne them; but within a while the very same causyd them inclyne to king Edwardes syde. Abowt the same time came letters from therle to king Henry, to Edmund duke of Soommerset, to tharch-bisshop of York, and others of the kinges cownsell, that they wold have regard to kepe the cytie in obedience two or thre days after the coomming of thadversaryes, for he wold in the meane time be ther with a mayne army to releve them. But John Stokton, knight, lord mayre of the towne, with John Crosby, and an other John, Warde by surname, cauling togythers at that very instant into the yeald haule the cownsayll of the towne, began to delyberate emongst themselves whether partie they had best take. In thend, whan they consyderyd that king Henry was suche a man as by himself cowld not very well governe the commonwelth, agane, that king Edward was wont to rewle the realme not after others but after his owne direction, and was suche a parsonage as cowld defend both himself and his from injury, they all agreyd to hold with him; which whan yt was knownen, the common sort, desirous of noveltie, as soone as they herd of king Edwardes approche, cowld not be holden bak, but they wold goe lustly to mete him, and to salute him in the way by the name of king. The duke of

Summerset and others of that faction, every man shyftyd for himself; but king Henry was, as a sacryfyce to be offeryd, left alone in the bysshops howse besides Powles, and ther, ignorant what way to take, as a man amazyd and utterly dullyd with trubbles and adversitie, was taken by king Edward and commytyd agane to ward. King Edward entryd London the iij^d. ides of Aprill, syx monthes after that he had transportyd into Flanders, and assembling the people togythers did first greatly commend the loyaltie of the cyttecynes, and gave specyall thankes to the magistrates that they had conteynyd the people in obedience; he dyd also vehemently rebuke with many woordes dyvers others, whether they wer cyttecynes or merchant strangers, whom he knew to have geaven money to king Heury for levying of an army, and greatly complanyd of ther offences; fynally, he willyd every man to be without feare, and pronouncyd free pardon of ther infirmyties, by which mylde dealyng he muche bound to him the myndes of the multytude.

II. 6 takene
by E. 4 in
London.

Therle in the meane time, seing thevent of the whole battaille to consyst in celerytie, marchyd great journeys after his enemyes, to thintent that, yf they wer hinderyd throughl any occasion by the way (as he hopyd they should be), than he might fyght with them before they should coome to London, which to do he thowght was of great importance; for he was not ignorant how that towne, being nether sufficently vttaylyd nor entrenchyd with any fortyfycation, was not hable to abide a siege, and therfor woont for the most part to yeald to the conqueror. And thus when he was already well forward in his journey, he herd that king Edward had entryd London, and had cast king Henry agane in prysone; wherfor conceaving than the whole matter to be browght of necessytie unto this ende, that all thinges must fynally be committyd to thevent of one feilde, he stayd at Saint Albones, partly to refreshe the soldiers, partly to delyberate more depely upon the cause.

The battle
at Barnete.

Ther was in the army John duke of Excester, an other John earle of Oxfoorth, Edinund duke of Soommerset, and the third John marquise Montacute, brother to therle, whom therle himself perceavyd well now to serve in this warre agaynst his owne mynde, and therfor knew not how muche he might trust unto him, but the brootherlie loove tooke away almost all suspencion; howbeyt, whatsoever he conceavyd of him or others, himself alone above the rest without all feare determinyd to go agaynst his ennemyes, and so departing from Saint Albones came unto a village in the myd way betwixt Saint Albones and the cytie of London, and ^{x^{nc}} myles from the cytie ytself, which they caule Barnet. This village ys sytuate uppon an hill, in the top wherof ys a place fyt for daraignyng of battayll. Heare the erle encampyd himself and abode his encemyes. Whan the rumor of therles approche was browght to London, king Edward musteryd owt incontynent a new army of most hable yowthes adjoyning the same to thoste which he had browght with him a little before unto the cytie; also he sowght for new supply from every hand; he preparyd afreshe for armor, weapon, and all other furnyture of warre; to be short, he applyed this matter with hart and hand to thuttermost of his powre, as the thing which he hopyd should make an end of all his travales and tormoyles. Thus furnished with an huge hoste he set forward agaynst his enemyes, and to thintent that, yf nede requyryd, he might be readyer to fyght whersoever he should fynde them, he marchyd on in square battayle: he had with him also king Henry as captiye, for that purpose peradventure that his enemyes seing in the fight ther king prisoner should be more throwghly afeard, or els, if the battaille should go against him, that by king Henryes meane he might be safe. He came in this order after the myddest of the day uppon the hill at Barnet, and ther encampyd himself not farre from his enemyes, wher, because he wold not be constrainyd to joigne battaille that night, he sod-

danelly entrenchid himself with new fortyfyeacations ; for to prolonge the time was for his advantage, seing that muche ayd came to him from every hand ; the same was on thother syde hurt to his enemyes, for they being farr from ther fryndes had no hope in new supplyes ; yeat both the hostes contynewed all the night in harnes, for, by reason of the nighnes of ther tentes, the noyse and nighing of man and horse was so great that nether army durst geave yt self to rest. But whan the day began to breake, therle of Warweke thus arayed hys armye : he placyd the marquye his brother and therle of Oxfoorth with part of thorsemen in the lyft wyng ; himselfe with the duke of Excester held the right ; in the myldest, betwixt both two, wer the archers, wherof the duke of Soommerset had the government. Whan his soldyers wer in this order, he than with many woordes exhortyd them to fyght manfully, to be of valyant and prompt corage, and to remember that they wer to fyght for lyberty of ther country agaynst a tyrant who had wickydly invadyd the royall seat. King Edward dyd the same, who also, after that he had orderyd all his owne forces, seing yeat an huge company of soldiers remane (for as muche as noble men assemblyd continually to gratifye him), gatheryd moreover all that multitude togythers, to make supply as nede should requyre, who, being arrayed in order of battayll, he encoragyd with many perswations, rehersing that he had browght them to fyght agaynst seditious parsons, who sowght nothing els but dissension emong all men, the bloode and slawghter of ther countrymen, and thutter ruyne of ther country. So after yt began to be light day, thalarm being sowndyd on ether partie, the battaile was begun : first they fought with arrow afur of, and aftirward with swordes hand to hand. King Edward, trusting to the multitude, wherin he farre exceedyd thother partie, pressyd on earnestly. Therle, remembryng his renowmyd vertew and prowesse, resystyd valyantly. Thus the fyght was myghtly mayntayned on both sydes ; many wer slane

every wher, whose rowmes freshe men dyd ever of new supply. In this tyme, whylest all men, myndyng busly the fyght, expectyd the event, therle, after long conflict, perceavynge his partie to be oppressyd with multytude, relyved them who fowght in the first front with a troup of light horsemen, and causyd thenemy soomewhat to geave ground; which whan king Edward saw, he sent furthwith others to succor them. Than was the fyght renewyd with greater slawghter than any time before. Now had the battayll dowtfully contynewyd from early in the morning till almost noone, whan king Edward, whom yt yrkyd that the conflict should last any longer, commandyd the forces which he had hovering owt of the mayne battaille, to geave charge uppon thennemy. But therle of Warwicke, seing the supply of his enemyes enter into the battayll, was therwith no whyt dismayd, but, in great confydence and hope of victory, most earnestly exhortyd, vehemently encoragyd, and hartyly desyryd hys soldiers, thowghie very weary, yet now to abyde this last brunt with valyant corage, cryng now and than emong that the battayll was at an end: howbeyt, when they, overtoylid with long labor, wer nothing almost styrryd up with these woordes, he, with invincible corage, made way emongest the myddest of his enemyes, wher, whyle he entryd unadvysydly, beating down and killing thennemy, farre from his owne forces, him also was thrust through and slane, manfullly fyghting, together with the marquise his broother, who folowyd him, having almost the victory in his hand. After therles death the resydew wer put to flyght and killed universally. This end had Richerd erle of Warweke, which, after so many sundry chances, happenyd unto him throwgh haultines of corage long before his tyme by course of yeres. Ther was killyd on both sydes abouyt x^m. men, and the nomber of captyves so great as by no meane was hable to be rekenyd. Edmund duke of Soomerset, with John erle of Oxfoorth, flying incessantly towardes Scotland, alteryd his purpose

The E. of
Warwicke
& the mar-
ques Mon-
tague
slayne.

for the length of the way, and got him into Wales to therle of Pembrowghe. Every man shyftyd for himselfe, soome one way, soome another. The duke of Excester also hardly escapyd into the saintuary at Westmynster, and ther kept himself secrete. King Edward, althowgh he got a bloody victory, yeat, lyft up in mynde exceedingly with the joy thereof, returnyd to London with captiye king Henry, in most triumphant maner. The dead corses of therle and marquise wer afterward conveyghyd to the same, and sufferyd to ly in coffyns the space of two days in the churche of saint Paule before they wer buryed, that all men might se they wer dead, least the people might be stirryd afterward to new garboyles by any pretensed name of Warweke. But men say that king Edward was not so glad for therle of Warwickes death, but that withall he was right sory for the destractyon of the marquise, whome, as we have shewyd, he accowntyd his frind.

In the meane time Margaret the quene being advertysyd that, Q. Margaret
by reason of king Edwardes returning into England, all thinges were
ret arrived
agane in trubble, made owt furthwith of choyse soldiers no smaule
England.
army, and, together with her soone Edward, contendyd with all
spede possible to returne into England ; but, Godes will being to
the contrary, the wynd and wether wer so agaynst hir as that she
arryvyd at an haven caulyd Waymouth later than the matter re-
quyryd. Here, whan she came a land, she understood that king
Edward was lord and master of all, that king Henry hir husband
was forsaken and taken, that therle of Warwiche and his broother
wer killyd, and that his forces wer partly destroyed, partly scat-
tryd ; and, fynally, that a scourge was receavyd most sharp and
bitter, as well in respecte of the confliet yt self, as of the tyme.
Whan she herd these things the myserable woman swownyd for
feare ; she was distrawght, dismayd, and tormentyd with sorow ;
she lamentyd the calamity of the time, the adversity of fortune,

hir owne toyle and mysery ; she bewaylyd the unhappy end of king Henry, which now she accowntyd assurydly to be at hand ; and, to be short, she so affliytyd hir self as one more desyrus to dy than lyve, foreseing perchance inwardly in mynde worse matters immynent and hanging over hir head. Than might quene Margaret have caulyd to mynde that these maner myschiefes had chaneyd princypally for the death of Humfrey duke of Gloucester, of which practise, thowgh perease she wer no partaker, yeat not giltles, because she myght have preservyd that good nobleman : for surely yf that one man had lyvyd and rewlyd the realme, king Henry had never comyd in so many hazards of hys lyfe. Wold to God many wold well weygh the causes of suche eventes, who measure equytee and right according to ther power and will : but I will returne to the matter. Quene Margaret perceaving yt was in vane to provyde for warres, and now almost despearing of hir owne saftye and hir soons, departyd to the next abbay, of the cystertyan order, which ys at a village caulyd Beawlyew, and there tooke sayntuary.

Quene Margaret & hir soone tooke sanctuary.

Diveres nobles that adheared to Q. Margaret.

The report in the meane time of hir coomming being brutyd abrode, Edmund duke of Soommerset, with John his broother, Thomas Cortney erle of Devonshire (who before had alway been of thother party), Jasper erle of Pembrowgh, John lord Wenlocke, and John Longstrothr chief captane of the knightes of Rhodes, met together quikly at Beaulyeu, and went to the quene. The dolefull wooman, seing the noblemen who wer hir frindes, was soomwhat refreshyd in mynde, and, layng feare soomwhat apart, to thintent they showlde not think she had doone any thing unadvysdly, she talkyd with them of many matters, and declaryd the cawse why she could not be present in tyme, and what reason movyd her to fly unto that saintwary ; beseeching them particularly, fyrist before all other thinges, to provyde for the safetie of hir soon ; and, despeyryng utterly to prevayle at this present by force of armes, she thought yt best to

sayle againe into France, yf the tyme of yeare, and malice of the meny wold so permyst, and ther to abyde till God should geave better opportunytie to use armes. The duke with thothers, after he had comfortyd the quene with many perswations, began to make a long discourse of the state and condition of warre; and first he thought that no delay was to be made, least therby themselves showld be weaker, and king Edward becoome stronger, who now had no army in readynes, seing that in the late conflict almost all the yowthly force of that factyon was broken and abatyd; and that he who in the late battayle against therle of Warwiche had had so good successe, might by good reason have the contrary in the war to come, consydering the chance of warre was woont right often to be varyable, eaven at an instant; secondly, he affirmyd that a good part of the noblytie stoode with king Henry, and that soldyers wold willingly coome to ayde hyr, yf so be that she wold, as she had often, becoome captane agaynst thennemy, and hereunto himself offeryd large forces, and more ample dyd promise in the name of both therles; lastely, after that he had shewyd many reasons why the victory was lyke to be thers, he besowght all men to be of good chere, and, because the matter requyryd haste, to treat no more of the state and condytion therof, but of thenterprising presently the warre yt self. To this the quene, whose care was most not for hir owne but for hir soones safety, and for that tooke great care and thought, whose owne most provydent mynde gave her that no good wold coome hereof, made awnswere, that she could lyke well of his opynion yf nothing wer to be hazardyd more dere than her owne lyfe; but she suspectyd least, whyle they sowght to succore the decayd case of the commonwelth, the lyfe of prince Edward should be in danger, in whom the whole hope of that howse consystyd, and therfor wisshyd that ether the warre might be put of unto an other time, or that hir soone might be sent into France, ther to be kept safe and secrete, whyle theevent of the first conflict showld fawle out. Treuly the mother had good cause

dylygently to provyde for the lyfe of hir soone, seing that next unto hir husband, whom she accowntyd lost, ther was not unto hir any thing better belovyd, dearer, nor more to hir comfoorth. Thus this most prudent quene requyryd that these princes, poltyk in martiall assayres, would well weygh all these thinges before hand, because, yf afterward they showld think yt mete to commence warre, she wold not deny to be of ther mynde. But yt was no boote to argew longer uppon the matter, the duke affirming that they wer all determinyd whyle lyfe dyd last to mayntaine warre agaynst ther enemyes, and therfor the thing that was with most mature delyberation concludyd was also with lyke firm consent to be performyd. And so all everiche one being encoragyd to make warre, every man for his part gatheryd forces. The duke through all hys domynyon musteryd with dylygence, likewyse did therle of Devonshire: therle of Pembrowgh also departyd to his earledom for the same cause. The Quene at the last, brought into the lyke hope of well doing, sayd, I pray God sped us well, and furthwith procedyd to Bath, as the duke had advysyd hir, ther to tary while hir confederates returnyd; but wher a way so ever she mynded to go, few knew thereof, to thend that hir intent showld not be discoveryd to hir adversaryes before she arryvyd in the place wherunto she travayld.

E. 4 levied
foarces &
came to
Marl-
bridge .

Also king Edward, whan he understoode that quene Margaret was coomyd into England, and that the duke of Soommerset and his allyes dyd gather an army, sent incontinent certane light horse men abrode every way to espye how great the forces of thenemyes wer, and whyther they tooke the course. They rode foorth spedily, as they had bene commandyd, and having scurried all the west part of the regyon, made relation what they had perceavyd and knowen. By whose travayle, whan the king could not be sure what way his enemyes tooke, he determinyd to encounter with them soomewher before they showld approche London, and so he marchyd with that force which he had levyed at London

into Oxfoorthshire, and seking a place fyt for pightehing his tentes, he chose the same at Abyngton, commanding that all powr to be gatheryd otherwher showld thyther resort. Here, when he had assemblyd all his hoste together, and understoode that his adversaryes wer coome to Bathe, tarrying ther to augment the number of ther soldiers by confluence of people who from every hand resortyd to them, he departed from thence to Marlebridge, which village is distant from Bath about xv^{ten}. myles, and thyther he made hast, to thintent that by geaving his enemyes a possybylytie of fyght he might joigne battaill with them before they went into Wales, whyther he suspectyd (as ther meaning was indede) that they wold go to joigne themselves with therle of Pembrowghe, who preparyd huge forces in those partes. But whan the Quene understoode that king Edward was before hir, she departyd from Bath and went to Bristow, sending certane horsemen from thence before to searche whether she might have safe and open passage throwgh Glocestershire into Wales, whose intent was first to go thyther for increasing of hir army, and than incontinent without delay to marche with baner displayed against thenemy whersoever he shoule abyde; her scurryers cam quykly agane, declaring that the towne of Gloucester was firme and fast to duke Richerd, king Edwardes brother; and thowgh they had first assayed them with fayre promyses, and than after with threatenings, to revolt, yett they wer no whyt moved therwithall. That being knownen, the quene departyd from Bristow, and marchyd to a towne sytuate upon the ryver Severne which is caulyd Tewkesbury, passing by Gloucester, because she wold wast no time in besieging the towne. Here, whan they had pighthyd ther tentes, the duke of Soomerset, having intellygence that king Edward, who folowyd them foote by foote, was not fur of, drew his men foorth into battaile aray, muche against thadvise of thother captaines, who thought best to tarry til therle of Pembrowghe shoule coome. King Edward also was

The battle
of Tewx-
bury.

at hand not long after with his army well orderyd; and, thalarme sowndyd on both sydes, they joignyd battayll. After long and sharp fight, Edmund the duke, pereeaving his smaule number to be overlayd with the multitude of his ennemyes, drew furthwith his men bak to thir standerde, that, being close togythers, they might more easely resyst. The same also soomwhat refreshhyd the eorage of the soldiers, so that they began more fiercely to lay on: but whan the quene had not freshe soldiers to supply the places of wearyd and woundyd, she was overmatchyd of the multitude, and in thend vanquisshed; hir company being killyd and taken almost every one. Ther dyed in that battaill of noble men, Thomas earle of Devonshire, John lord Wenlock, lord John, broother to the duke of Summerset, with many other. Ther wer taken, Margaret the quene, Edward the prince, Edmund duke of Soomerset, John lord of Saint Johns, and xx^{te}. moe knighthes. All those, except quene Margaret and the prince, wer within two days after beheadyd in the same towne. Edward the prince and excellente yowth, being browght a lyttle after to the speache of king Edward, and demaundyd how he durst be so bowld as to enter and make warre in his realme, made awnswere, with bold mynde, that he came to recover his awneyent inherytance; hereunto king Edward gave no awnswere, onely thrusting the young man from him with his hand, whom furthwith, those that wer present wer George duke of Clarence, Richerd duke of Gloucester, and William lord Hastings, crewelly murderyd; his corse, with the resydw of them that wer slane, was interryd in the next abbay of monkes of thorder of St. Benedict. But quene Margaret was convayd captyve to London, and, not long after being ransomyd, was of thenemy sufferyd to depart, who saylyd into France, lyvyd in perpetuall moorning, and yeat not that so muche for hirself or hir husband, who wer now well agyd, as for the losse of hir soone Edward, whom she, whom Henry his father, thowght to leave in

Edward
the prince
slaine in
the kings
presence.

Q. Marg-
aret ran-
somed &
sente
overe.

saftie, after the losse of ther owne lyves and dignyties, by reason wherof ther could not have happenyd to them in all this world a matter of more grefe. But king Edward, rejoysing immortally for the victory, which endyd intestine dyvysyon, after he had viewyd circumspectly all that part of the realme wherin his adversaryes had assemblyd, returnyd to London, wher was woonderfull rejoysing of all sortes, with contynuall prayer, the space of thre days. This was thend and conclusion of king Edwardes martiall employtes, which was the yere of our salvation M.CCCC.LXXI., and the xith of king Edwardes raigne.

About the time of king Edwardes returne, Thomas Fauconbridge, base begotten soone to William Fauconbridge erle of Kent, a man of much audacytie, and factious withall, whom evell lyfe especyally stirryd upp to disturb the commonwelth, made a great garboyle: for he had somtyme bene made admyrall by the erle of Warweke to kepe the passage betwixt Calice and Dover, that none of king Edwardes syd might frely pass; after that, being become nedye and offensyve, as well to frend as foe, he began openly to play the pyrate, wherby yt came to passe that within short space, being furnished with good store of shippes, he robbyd and spoylyd all abowt the coaste. At the last, arryving in Kent, he cam a land, and, having gatheryd no smaule powr of Kentishe people, he marchid foorth right to London, and at his very first cooming made great spoyle, all his men showting and crying that they wer coome to delyver Henry ther king. But whan yt was knownen that quene Margaret was vanquished in battaille, than William Edwardes, lord mayor for that yere, with John Aleyn and an other John, Chelley, shyryffes, assemblyd a good number of soldiers, and geaving charge upon Fawconbridge reskewyd the spoyle and put him to flight, kylling and taking many of the Kentish folk in the chace.

This stere, lyttle though yt wer, yeat yf yt had bene rasyd a

Bastard
Faucon-
bridg, with
the Kent-
yshe men,
came to
surprise
London.

lyttle befor, no dawt but yt had browght King Edwardes assayres in great hazard. But trewly king Edward was in these last warres the happyest man in the world, in that his adversaryes assayled him at severall times. Surely, yf at the same time that therle of Warwyke hastenyd to London with his most forward and well furnisshyd forces, quene Margaret had of an other syde enteryd England, as she thryse had earnestly assayed, wherby she behinde and he before had urgyd thenemy at one instant; or yf Edmund duke of Soomerset had not at Teuchesbury daraignyd battaill before Jaspar erle of Pembrowgh had with his supply arryvyd; or yf Faweonbridge had assaultyd the cty withall at the same time, thone or thother of these thynges nedes must have folowyd; that ether king Edward of fyne force must have fled, or bene compellyd fowly to yeald. Thus may we se that, as in all other thinges so in warre especially, according to the common proverb, the good fortune of a man ys all. Yeat yt may be peradventure that this came to passe by reason of thinfortunacy of the howse of Lancaster, which wyse men thowght eaven than was to be ad-serybyd to the rightewousnes of God; because the soveraignty extortyd forceably by Henry the Fourth, grandfather to king Henry the Sixt, cowld not therby be long enjoyed of that famly, and so the grandfathers offence redowndyd unto the nephews. But now agane to the matter.

Basterde
Faucon-
bridg
beheeded.

The Faweonbridge sped him spedly unto his ships, but soone after arryving unadvysydly at Southampton he was taken and beleadyd. Howbeyt, Jaspar erle of Pembrowgh, whan he understoode that the Quene was vanquysshed in a fowghten feilde at Tewkesbury, and that matters wer past all hope of recovery, retyryd with his retynew, which he was conductyng to his confederates, bak agane to Chepstow. Whyle he heare taryed lamenting that headynesse, which alway ys blynde and improvident, had utterly overthowne the universall powr of king Henry, and dely-

beratyng with his frends what course was best to take, behold one Roger Vaughan, a very valyant man, sent thyther by king Edward for that purpose, went about by a trayn to take him; wherof therle being advertysyd tooke the sayd Roger within the towne Rogere Vaughan and cut of his head; and so he sufferyd death at therles apoynt- loste his heade. ment which himself assayd by guyle to have brought therle unto.

Hereof may we gather that a man ought to feare a plague to hinge over his owne head who seketh an others destruction.

Therle departyd from thence to Pembrowghe, whom incontinent Morgan Thomas, sent by king Edward, besegyd, and kept in with The earle of Pen- broke is beseechede. diche and trenche that he might not escape; but the viijth day folowing he was delyveryd from that distres by Davyd, broother to the sayd Morgan, hys assuryd faythfull frind, and departyd furthwith to a towne by the sea syde caulyd Tynby, wher having a barke preparyd owt of hand he saylyd into France with his Jasper E. of Pen- brooke and Henry E. of Rich- mond sayle to Fraunce. brootherers soon Henry erle of Richemond, and certane other his frindes and servantes, whose chaunce being to arryve in Brytayne he presentyd himself humbly to Francisse duke ther, and, report- ing the cause of his cooming, submyttd himself and his nephew to his protection. The duke reecavyd them willingly, and with suche honor, courtesy, and favor intertwynyd them as though they had bene his brootherers, promysing them upon his honor that within his domynyon they showld bee from thencefurth far from injury, and passe at ther pleasure to and fro withoutw danger.

King Edward, whan his realme was thus pacfyed, to thintent ther showld be no new insurrections, travalyd not long after throughg Kent, wholy because the last tumult under the conduct of the Fawconbridge had procedyd from thence, and he punyshed severely those who had made the sedytion; which busynes being dispatchyd, to thintent every man might conceave a perfyte peace to be attainyd, and that all feare of enemyes might be abolisshyd, H. 6 mur- thered in Henry the Sixt, being not long before depryvyd of hys dyademe, the Towre.

was put to death in the tour of London. The contynual report is, that Richerd duke of Gloucester killyd him with a sword, whereby his brother might be delyveryd from all feare of hostylytie. But who so ever wer the killer of that holy man, yt is apparant ynough, that as well the murtherer as the procurers therof sufferyd punysshement for ther offences, whio, whan as afterward they had none enemyes upon whom to satisfy and satvate ther craultie, exercysyd the same upon themselves, as hereafter in place convenyent shalbe declaryd, and embrewyd ther handes in ther own bloode. Afterward the corse of king Henry was without any honor browght from the towre to Saint Paules churche, wher yt lay upon the beere all one day, and the day folowing was caryed unto an abbay of moonkes of Saint Benedicts Order, in a towne caulyd Chertsey, distant xv^{ten} myles from London, and ther was buried; but not long after yt was transferryd from that place to the castle of Wyndsoare, and ther layd in a new tombe in Saint George his chaple. The sayd abbay was buyldyd of old time at Chertsey by St. Erkenwald bishop of London, abowt the yere of our Lord six hundredth seventie nyne, as we have shewyd in the fourth booke. King Henry raignyd xxxvij^{te} yeres, and, after he receavyd the kinglome agane, vj. monthes; he lyyyd lii. yeres. He begot of quene Margaret Edward his onely soone, prince of Wales. He was taule of stature, slender of body, wherunto all his members wer proportionably correspondent; he was of coomly vysage, wherin did glister contynually that bowntefulnes of disposition wherwith he was abundantly endewyd. He dyd of his owne naturall inclynation abhorre all vices both of body and mynde, by reason wheroft he was of honest conversation eaven from a chylde, pure and cleane, partaken of none evell, ready to conceave all that was good, a contemner of all those thinges whiche commonly corrupt the myndes of men, so patient also in suffering of injuryes, receavyd now and then, as that he covetyd in his hart no revenge,

H. 6 buried
twise.

The foun-
dation of
Chertsey
Abbey.

H. 6 dis-
cribed.

but for the very same gave God Almighty most humble thankes, because therby he thought his sinnes to be wasshyd away ; yea, what shalle we say, that this good, gratiouſ, holy, sober, and wyſe man, wold affirme all these myſteries to have happenyd unto him both for his owne and his ancestors manyfold offences ; wherfor he dyd not muche account what dignitie, what honor, what ſtate of lyfe, what ſoone, what frinds he had lost, nor made muche dole for the ſame ; but yf in any thing he had offendyd God, that had he regard of, that dyd he morne for, that was he ſorry for. These and ſuiche lyke actions and offiſces of parfyte holynes, made, that for his cauſe God ſhewyd many myracles in his lyfe time. By reaſon wheroft king Henry the viith, not without deſert, began a few yeres paſt to procure at the hande of Julius byſhop of Rome that he miſt be canonized for a Saynt, but being preventid by hasty death he could not perform that honorable fact. Moreover, *id officiū.* this Henry was of lyberall mynde ; he had good learning in great reverenſe, and loovyd them who wer indewyd therwithall, wherfor he helpyd his owne people that they miſt be instruetyd ; for he foundyd a ſumpteuous ſchoole at Eton, a towne next unto Wyndſore, in whiche he placyd a colledge of priestes, and children in great number, ther to be brougħt upp and taught ther grammer freely and without coſte. The ſame man was alſo fownder of the Kinges colledge at Cambrydge, which ſo floryssheth at this day with thornaments of learning that yt may well bee cawlyd the prince of all colledges. But now I will returne to the matter.

Thus king Edward, being delyveryd from a great part of his cares and cauſes of feare, to thintent ther ſhould not remane any trace or tracke of the faction adverſe, determynyd utterly to deſtroy the remnaunt of his enemyes wheroever they wer ; and therfor he ſent George archebiſhop of York, therle of Warwickes broother, to pyne away in pryon at Guyons, wher he contynewyd long in ward, but being afterward ſet at lybertie, he dyed by and

by for sorow; unto whom succeedyd Laurence Both, and to that Laurence, dying three yere after, Thomas Rotheram bisshop of Lineolne, who was by orderly succession the liijth bishop. Also the king found meane to coom by John erle of Oxford, who not long after the discomfyture receavyd at the towne of Barnet fled into Cornewall, and both tooke and kept Saint Mychaels Mount, and sent him to a castle beyond the sea caulyd Hammes, wher he was kept prysoner more than xij. yeres after. Many moreover wer upon lyttle suspytion taken in many places, and other commytyd to ward or grevously fynyd. Besydes these thinges, to thintent that his foes might fynde no succor in the countries adjoyning, he tooke treuce with James king of Scottes for xx. yeres. But yeat because he might have soomwhat to think uppon, and that he showld not lyve altogether in perfyte securtie, he had intelligence at the same time that therles of Pembrowgh and Richemond were transportyd into Brytayn, and of the duke ther curtesly receavyd and intertaynd; which matter indede he tooke very grevously, and thowgh hys mynd gave him that soome evell wold coome therby, which to prevent he sent in all hast seeret messengers to the duke, promysing to geave great rewardes so that he wold make delyvery of both therles. The duke herd willingly king Edwardes ambassage, and whan he understoode that therles were so riche a pray he determynyd not to let them go, but to kepe them more warely than befoor, making awnswer to thambassadours that he might not delyver them to the king, bye reason of his promyse and fydelyte geaven to the contrary; but he wold for his cause kepe them so sure as ther should be none occasion for him to suspect that they should ever procure his harme any maner of way. Whan thambassadours could not obtaine the thing they requyryd they receavyd that for awnser, and returned to the kinge, who than wrote agane to the duke, requiring that for his honour, good fame, and constancy, he wold performe the thing which of his ownc accord

John E. of
Oxford
sent pri-
soner to
Hames
Castle.

he had offeryd, and he promysyd both money, ayd, and huge gyfts, and payd the same plentyfully every yeare afterward. The duke than seing that the remanyng of those two erles with him redowndyd to his advantage, least peradventure they might depart soome other wher, devydyd them in sundre, and, removing from them thinglishe servyteures which they brought with them, placyd men of his owne country to wayt uppon and gard them. In the A parle-
meane time the king caulyd a parlyament at Westminster the
ijj^d ides of October and xijth yere of his raigne, which was of mans
salvation M.cccc.lxxiiij.; wherein first wer revyved all suche his con-
stitutions and lawys, which had bene repealyd and abrogatyd a
lyttle before by king Henry the vith, and statutes made for the for-
fature and sale of all his adversaryes possessions, and the cawlyng
home again from exile of them who a few monthes before had bene
attaintyd of treason by his enemyes; secondly, a taske was im-
posyd for money, wheroft the kinges coffers were very bare; thirdly,
as well publyk as pryvate quarrells rysen emongest the nobylytie,
wheroft the number was few, the better part of them being con-
sumyd with domesticall dissention, was pacfyed, appeasyd, and
taken upp. The king himself helpyd this matter as muche as in
him lay; who to move other men by his good example to forget
injuryes and lay hatryd apart, grauntyd fre pardon for all treason
and breache of law to all men that presently wer within the realme
and had bene hytherto of thother faction. Not long also after
that he receavyd to his grace and favor the German marchantes The Ger-
who wer borne uppon the sea coast of Almany, whom he had mane mar-
before cast in pryson, confyscatyng ther goodes, because certane restored.
chantes.
ships of Lin had bene interceptyd by the Danes for a murder
wheroft thinglishe men wer accowntyd guyltie, of which sayd fact
the Germane marchantes wer reportyd to bee pryncypall pro-
curers. But whan tryall of treuth endyd the controversy, king
Edward made unto the marchantes full restitution, who being

afterward by reason hereof made more circumspect, have with great diligence conservyd ther pryvededges receavyd both of king Richerd the ijrd and of king Henry the Seventh.

E. 4 joyned
in warre
with the
duke of
Burgundy
against the
K. of
Fraunce.

Whyle that king Edward gave himself wholy to the setting in order his causes at home, behold he was cawlyd by the duke of Burgoyne to thenterprysing of forreyn warre agaynst Lewys the Freneche king, that so soomwhat myght alway remane to the disturbing of eyvyll tranquillytie. The kinge cowld not choise but joigne in that warre for many causes, wherof chiefly wer two; thone because king Lewys was his enemy, as he who had armyd therle of Warwicke in Fraunce agaynst him, thother for that, besydes thaffynytie which he had with the duke of Burgoigne, he was also singulerly beholden unto him for lyss manyfold benyfyttes bestowyd uppon him whan he was dryven owt of England: wherfor, after conference had with his nobles of so weightie warres, he awnsweryd the duke of Burgoigne that he wold joigne with him therein agaynst the Freneche king. Trewly at that time the rage of warre was great betwixt duke Charles and king Lewys, and because king Lewys being an hard and foward man of nature was injuryous and spytfull both to frind and foe, therfor many noble men of France, abhorring his unreasonable dealing, conspyryd ether openly or secretly with the duke of Burgoigne: in the number of whom was Lewys of Lucembrough, constable of France, who conferryd with the Burgoignyon and right many of the noblytie to bring the king in suche distress, as that ether he might reforme his lyfe, or els be in jeopardy, insomuche that the commonwelth of France showld be urgyd both with forrein and intestyne warre all at once. The duke discoveryd all his secretees to king Edward, the rather therby to allure him to take armes, which matters indeede, as assuryd signes of victorye, drew fynally the king into that warre, who with all spedē possyble preparyd both hoste and navy; and because muche money was necessary to

be had for diffraying the charges of that army, and that the money gatheryd a lyttle before by meane of taske was disbursyd and spent already in his domesticall affayres, a devyse eam in his heade, wherby he might pollytykly procure his more wealthy frindes to geave money, in so muche that they who wold not part withall might be cawlyd unkynd. And therfor he causyd certane his officers of receit and commissioners to caule before them all riche men generally, and to explane to them particularly, the cause he had to make warre, theemptynes of his coffers, and for the trew hart, goodwill, and favor which they bore his maieste, to require ther help of soome money, to support the charge of this warre: but to be short, his practyse so prevalyd, that soome remembryng the benyfytys receavyd, soome for shamefastnes, soome other for very feare, every man professing to shew his goodwill, according to his habylytie, aydyd the king with money, and he, to shew his thankfull accepting of this benyfyt, and for the perpetuall memory therof, caulyd the trybute thus freely geaven a benevolence, though perchance very many gave that benevolence with evell will. Thus king Edward, furnisshyd perfytely with all thinges appertanyng to the warres, and having assemblyd an army of 20,000 men, passyd the seas to Calyee the fourth nones of July, to whom duke Charles reparyd furthwith, and, putting him in comfoorth of victory, earnestly exhortyd him to apply this warre with all devoyr, wherby he night and should recover his right from the Frenche.

But whan king Lewys understoode that king Edward was E. 4 sent already arryvyd with an army, in the contynent he augmentyd his forces, and the more danger that he saw hung over his head from so many most mightie enemyes togythers, with so muche more celerytie determinyd to make head agaynst them; wherfor he sent before, with suche force as he had hastely gatheryd, Robert Stote-vylle, his lyvetenant, to the bounds of Artoyse, who might

an army
into France
in aid of
the duke of
Burgundy.

receave the first brunt of thinglishe approche ; himselfe the meane whyle stayd at Senles, ymagening by what meane he might bring the matter to a treaty ; for, seing he was forsaken of his subjectes, whom himself had rejectyd, he dyd inwardly forsee, that yf bloode wer once drawen the warre wold be longer and more perillus, wherfor he was desyrus of nothing so muche as of peace. Suche matters as these wer in king Lewys head, whan king Edward removyd from Calicee and entryd Artoyse, unto whom the French king sent furthwith ambassadours for peace. The king of England gave them audience, and having herd ther ambassage, began to grow coole, and not muche to mislyke of peace : for thowghe he wer a valyant man, and by fame of his nobles factes encoragyd rather to desyre warre than peace with the Frenche, thancyent enemy of thinglishe name, yeat whan he revolvyd with himself, how that the forces of England were so consumyd with eyvyll contentyon as yf nede should require a new supply of soldyers yt was almost vnpossyble to levy the same conveniently of his owne subjectes, and whan also he was not ignorant of emptie coffers, so that he should not be hable to make pay any long time to the soldier, he thowght that of very necessytie he must yealde and refrane from warre in the end, which he myght now fynish with honorable conditions, having especcially just cause to complane that the Burgoygnyon and he of Lucembroughe dyd not performe that which they promysyd at the begynning. Therfor, to thambassadours requestyng that he wold coome to a parle with the king, he aunsweryd at the last, that he wold so do, and so, having apoyntyd tyme and place, suffryd them to depart. Whan they made relation that thaunswer was geaven according as was desyryd, king Lewys, being fortyfyed both with men and money, came first with hart and goodwill to Pinguigny, which is a towne in the terrytory of Amyens, wher the meting of the two kinges was apoyntyd ; whyther also came not long after king Edward,

Ambassa-
dores sente
from the
Frenche
king to
treate of
peace,
which was
concludyd.

gardyd with great force of soldiers. Here the two kinges meting upon the brydge which is over the ryver Some, had long talk togythers, and fynally concludyd a treuce for many yeres, uppon these condityons: that king Lewys showld pay presently unto king Edward for his expenses in the preparation of this warre lv^m. crownes, and yerely afterward l^m.

After these thinges, to confirme, strengthen, and tye fast thys new frendship with soome knot of allyance, Elzzabeth, king Edwards dowghter, was covenantyd in mariage to Charles, king Lewys his soone. In that warre no man miscaeryd but John Fraunce, duke of Excester; he had bene in sayntuary, as I have shewyd before, and, serving king Edward in this voyage, was afterward, contrary to promyse, taken sooddenly owt of the way: that was the year of mans salvation M.cccc.lxxv^{to}. King Lewys from thencefurth payd the trybute trewly to the king of England unto the begynning of that yere wherin he dyed, than (as I suppose) he denied to pay the same as a man knowyng his fate approche; wherupon we may gather argument that the kings concludyd at the beginning a league, and not a trewee, which was for both ther advantages. But whan the Burgoygnyon, and he of Lusembrough knew that king Edward had concludyd peace with king Lewys, they chafyd at the matter woonderously; they sentt to him byting, threatening, and envyouse letters, laing upon him the blame why they wer not revengyd upon king Lewys, which he was so farre from geaving regard unto (as one who, after so long troubles in warres, sowght now onely how to acquite and lowse himself at the last from all martiall affayres,) as that he set not a rushe therby. But Lewys of Lucembrowghe was specyally damnyfyed by thys alye-nation of king Edward, by whom the secret practyses of the conspirators wer discoveryed, who within few days was apprehendyd, and beheadyd at Paris, the last constable, as they caule him, emongest the Frenche nation.

Elizabeth
E. 4 da.

maried to
Charles
prince of

John duke
of Exeter
slaine.

The duke
of Burgun-
dye dis-
pleaz'd
with the
peace we
made with
Fraunce.

E. 4 sent
to the duke
of Britany
to have
Henry E.
of Rich-
monde
delyvered.

King Edward having by this meane pacifyed as well martiall as cuyll causes, althowght by victory of so many battaylles he wer accowntyd the happyest man of that age, who might now passe the rest of his lyfe in most perfyte peace and securytie, yeat for as muche as yowng Henry erle of Richemond (thonely ympe now left of king Henry the 6ths blode) was yeat on lyve he adjudgyd this onely thing to disturb all his felycye, so that he lyvyd, as yt wer, in perpetuall feare; wherfor he determinyd yeat once agane to solycyte Francisse duke of Brytayne, with gyfte, promise, and prayer, to betray that young erle into his handes, who he thought wold the rather satisfye his desire, because all king Henrye the vj^{tes} faction was by him in effect extynguished; and therfor he sent ambassadours in all haste to the duke, loden with great substance of gold, and that his demaunde might seme more honest, he comandyd them to tell the duke that he desyryd erle Henry because he might make soome matehe with him in mariage, by affynytie, wherof the rootes of thadverse faction myght be utterly pullyd upp. Thowghe in dede he had no meaning to bring the same to passe by affynytie, as afterward ensewyd (so that yt may be thowght the kyng dyd propheey), but eaven by the very death of erle Henry. The duke herd thambassadours curtesly, and first began to denay, and make many excuses why he might not lawfully do yt. At the last, weryed with prayer and vanquished with pryce, he delyveryd therle to thambassadours, commanding him by his letters to king Edward, not supposing that he had commyttyd the sheepe to the woolffe, but the soone to the father, as one who thowght that king Edward ment simply to mary with Henry Elizabeth hys eldest dawghter. Thambassadours having obtaynyd the pray they desyryd, departyd with great joy to St. Maloes, a towne upon the sea coste, ther to have take shippynge, and so to have saylyd into England. But erle Henry, knowing that he was caryed to his death, throughte agony of mynde fell by the way

The duke
of Britany
yelded to
send the
E. of Rich-
mond to
E. 4, and
beinge
one of his
guards,
sente for
him agane.

into a fever. In which mean time John Chenlet, a man of suche reputation emong the nobles of Bretayne as that regyon had few lyke, and whom the duke acceptyd specyally well above all other, was in the country; but after he knew of the matter, being percyd with the shamefulnes thereof, he spedely reparyd to the court, and, as he was wont, presentyd himself famlyarly unto the duke, standing a prety whyle very sad and heavy without speaking, so that the duke, marvaling to se him in suche dumppes, demandid what the matter was that made him so pensyffe as his countenance pretendyd. Whereunto John awnsweryd: ‘Most noble duke, this palenes of countenance ys unto me a messenger of death, which yf before this day had happenyd showld trewly muche lesse have grevyd, for I showld not have bene reservyd to so great sorow as your late fact hath depely pryntyd within my brest, which surely will cause the losse of my lyfe, or alteration of my condition and state, or at the leaste from henceforth perpetually to lyve most myserable; for yow, O duke, have by most honorable dealinges gotten a renownyd and vertewous report, whom all men with one assent extolle above the skyes, yeat this, alas, of most highe and huge account (by your favor and leave be yt sayd) your self seme to have leest regard unto of all other thinges, who lately, forgetting your promyse and faith geaven, have delyveryd Henry earle of Richemond, that most innocent ympe, to be torn in peces by bloody butchers, to be myserably tormentyd, and fynally to be slane; wherfor all that loove yow, whereof I of many am one, can not choose but be grevyd when we se yowr most famous renowne to be stanyd for ever with the note of falshoode and treachery.’ To these woordes the duke replyed immedately: ‘Peace, my trustie and welbelooovyd John, I pray the; ther will no suche thing happen to erle Henry, for king Edward is desirous to make him his soone in lawe.’ Than John sayd moreover: ‘Belev me (most noble duke) Henry ys almost lost alreadie, whom yf yow

shalle once permtyt to step one foote owt of your jurisdiction, all the world shalle not after that be hable to save his lyfe.' The duke was movyd with these woords of John Chenelet, who before that time ether had not suspectyd that king Edward sowght by suche meane to deceave erle Henry, ether els was being seduceyd by mony from honestie, fayth, and good dealing, had not consyderyd what stooode with his honor, and sent incontynent Peter Landofe, his treasurer, to stay therle. Peter usyng great celerytie came anon after thinglishe ambassadors unto St. Maloes, and counterfatynge soome busynes, while that by long talk devysyd of purpose he hinderyd them of ther intendyd voy-age, he causyd erle Henry, almost dead, to be browght polytykly into a most sure sayntuary within the sayd towne, and not long after reducyd him agane to the duke, delyveryd from feare of death, and by that occasion pretyly well amendyd. Hereof may we know that Greke adage to be most trew—Man, to man, God; for Henry, a young noble man betrayed to death without his owne desert, was preservyd sooddelenly, by thelp of John Chenelet, a passing good prince. God grant that suche as have soveraigntie over others may receave instructyon by this example, that suche as lack good cownsayllers may once at the least learne both to receave into ther famly, into ther pryvy cownsaille, them that know how and when to geave admonytion, and also to folow ther wholsome advise. But as to thinglishe ambassadors, being thus spoylyd both of money and marchandyse, and for the same grevouslys complayning, because they should not returne home alto-gether voyd, Peter promysed to do his indevor that Henry showld ether be kept in sayntuary, wherunto he had got himself by ther neglygence (as he sayd), or els showld be commytyd to ward agane with the duke, so as ther should be no cause to feare hym. And thus derely dyd the king of England bye the custody of his enemy for thre days.

King Edward, who in the meane time desyryd to know of his ambassadors proceedinges with the duke, and therfor thought the tyme very long till he might heare therof, when he understoode that they had bene so nighe the very poyn特 of conveyghing erle Henry prysoner to him into England as nothing could be more nere and escape, was very sory that the matter had not succeeded. But hearing that therle shoulde be safely kept his mynde was easyd, and from thenceforth thought best to have more regard how to encrease his owne welth, which was very slender, than of any thing els; and so for a while gave himself to seke busylly his owne profyt; whereby when he had fyllyd his coffers with gold and silver suffycyently, remembryng then what appertanyd to honor, he shewyd himself furthwith a lyberall, bowntyfull, and profitable prince to the commonwelth: but eaven loe sudaynly he fell into a fact most horryble, commandyng rashly and uppon the suddane his brother George duke of Clarence to be apprehendyd and put to death, who was drowned (as they say) in a butte of malmesey; the woorst example that ever man cowld remember. And as touching the cause of his death, though I have enquiryd of many, who wer not of leest authortie emongest the kinges counsaylle at that time, yeat have I no certaintie therof to leave in memory. A report was eaven then spred emongest the common people, that the king was afeard, by reason of a soothsayers prophecy, and so became incensyd agaynst his broother George, which prophecy was, that, after king Edward, shoulde raigne soome one the first letter of whose name should be G. And because the devels ar wont in that sort to envegle the myndes of them who conceave pleasures in suche illusions, with ther crafty conceytes and subtylties, menn sayd afterwardes that the same prophecy tooke effect, whan after Edward the duke of Gloucester usurpyd the kingdom. Others lay an other cause of his death, which ys in this sort. That abowt the same time thold

George
duke of
Clarence
committed
to the
Tower.

The maner
of the duke
of Claren-
ces
deeth.

hatryd renewing betwixt the two brothers, then the which nothing ys more vehement, the duke, being a wydower, requyryd, by meane of his sister Margaret, to have in maryage Mary, thonely dowghter of Charles duke of Burgoigne, and that king Edward, envyng his brothers prosperytie, hinderyd that affynytie. Ther-uppon pryvy grudge further growing, a certane servant of the dukes was the very same time also convict of sorcery and executyd, against which dede whan the duke could not hold him content, but vehemently speake and cry owt, the king muche movyd with this exclamacion commytyd the duke to warde, and not long after, being condemnyd, by right or wrong, put him to death. But yt ys very lykly that king Edward right soone repentyd that dede; for (as men say) whan so ever any sewyd for saving a mans lyfe, he was woont to cry owt in a rage, "O infortunate broother, for whose lyfe no man in this world wold once make request;" affirming in that manyfestly, that he was cast away by envy of the noblytie. The duke left behind him two chyldren, Margaret, who after maryed to Rycherd Pole, and Edward, whom the king made erle of Warwieke. These thinges were doone that yere which was of mans salvation M.CCCC.LXXX^{tie}, and the xix^{ten} yere of king Edwardes raigne. And thus being delyveryd from all care of warres and cyyill seditions, which before that time might have happenyd, the king began to marke more severely thoffences of noblemen, and to be more covetous in gathering of money, by reason wheroft many were perswadyd in ther opnyonyons that he wold from thenefurth proove an hard and severe prince; for after the death of his brother, as he perceavyd that every man fearyd him, so now he fearyd nobody. But that matter was preventyd by brevytie of his lyfe. And thus may we se that as well prosperytie ys soometyme cause of evell unto them who enjoy yt, as aduersytie profytable to them who ar patient.

Abowt the sayd tyme, James king of Scotts delt, by ambassa-

dors, with king Edward, that he wold bestow Cecyly his dowghter A motyon was made upon his soone James, whom he dyd handfast to that young by K. prinee. This Cecyly was yownger than Elyzabeth, whom I have James of Scotland before mentyonyd to have bene bethrouththyd, a prety while ago, for the lady to Charles, soon to Lewys king of Francee. But nether thone Cecely to affynytie nor thother tooke effect; for the better part of high to his estates ar woont oftentimes rather in thend to folow that serveth sonne. for ther present profyt, then that which ys honest and honorable; for after that king Lewys was delyveryd from hostyle feare, he than dyd not onely conteneine thaffynytie confirmyed already by fayth and fidelytie with king Edward, but began almost openly to deny payment of the money which he had promysyd; and so by wrangling and shifting, had alreadie defraudyd the king of England of one yeres trybute, which the king determinyd to revenge by dint of swoord. And the Scottishe king also, an assuryd and contynewall confederat of the Frenche, after he herd that the Frenche king wold not perform his woord, supposing that he might do what him lyst, brake treuce with England, and molestyd the borders therof with suddaine incursions; wherfor king Edward, with great indignation, determinyd to make warre uppon Scotland; yeat afterward, whan king James excusyd the fact as doone by the arrogancy of soome his subjectes without his pryvetye, the matter might have bene easly appeasyd, yf in thend king Edward had not bene laboryd by king James owne broother to enterpryse the same warre: for king James, being a man of sharp wytt, and trusting more than mete was to his owne head and opynyon, gave lyttle care to good advyse; and because he wold not be fownd fawlt withall, he therfor tooke to be his cownellers men of meane cauling, and becam so offensyve to the noblytie by appealing soome dayly of haynous erymes, and punishing others by the purse, that he causyd them ether to go willingly in exyle, or, fayning soome busynes, to fly soome other

Alexander, wher. Of which number was his brother, Alexander duke of Albany, who, as he travalyd into France, tarrying with king Edward, Scotts perswaded E. 4 to send an army into Scotland.

wher. Of which number was his brother, Alexander duke of Albany, who, as he travalyd into France, tarrying with king Edward, ceassyd not to incense him to revenge his honor, and augment his desire that way. Therfor whan kinge Edward had in mynde, as sayd ys, to revenge the late injurye, and was also eggyd on to armes by the duke, who promysyd great ayd, he fynally determinynd with good will so to do, both because king James, besydes the late breache of treuce, had relevyd king Henry the vjth and those of his faction with all thinges necessary, and also for that he had good hope the duke wold be faythfull unto him, yf, his brother being expulsyd, he might enjoy the crowne: and therfor he addressyd furthwith agaynst the Scottes, Richerd his brother, duke of Gloucester, Henry the fourth erle of Northumberland, Thomas Stanley, and the said duke of Albany, with an army royll. King James the meane whyle advertysyd of thinglishe mens approche, furnisshyd furthwith in readynes suche forces as he presently could levy, and going agaynst his enemyes, cam unto Berwiche for defence of hys borders; but whan he understande that the English men exeedid him both in force and number, and perceavyd also that his owne soldiers was scarce well to be trustyd, removing therfor abowt midnight, he retyryd to Edenbrowgh, ther to abyde thennemy. The duke of Gloucester, entring Scotland, wastyd and burnyd all over the countrie, and, marchyng further into the land, encampyd himself not farre from his enemyes; whan as, perceaving that not one man of all the Scottishe nation resortyd to the duke of Albany, he suspected treason, not without cause; wherfor he tooke treuce with king James, and returnyd the right way to Berwiche, which in the meane time Thomas lord Stanley had woone, without losse of many his men. And king James, whose subjectes bare him no good will, was forcyd by nesitie, after treuce taken, to digest that displeasure of winning the towne. The duke of Albany, repenting afterward that he had bene the author of that war, wherby both his country and himself was

annoyed, and seing himselfe in no reputation emongest thinglishe men, departyd into France, wher not long after he was killyd in runnyng at tylt. He left behind him a soone cawlyd John.

Thys exployt fortunatly fynysshed, king Edward, mynding to take on hand, as soone as time wold serve, thother war that was immynent, caulyd an assemble toguythers, and, supposing all thin-juryes before receavyd of the Frenche was to be of no account in comparyson of this present now commytyd, made relation to his noble men that the league was lately broken by them, the trybute denayd, the maryage of his dowghter forsaken ; and therfor exhortyd that they wold, as time showld serve, defend thonor of ther realme. With which matters all being equally incensyd, made awnswer, that they knew well, every man wold be desyrous to fyght with the Frenche men, whom they had so often vanquisshyd, and that for thonor of ther country they ought to refuse no travale, and therfor they wer ready at his commandment to prosecute so great injury with swoord and fyre. Whan he knew the mynde of his temporall lordes, a subsydye was assessyd also upon the clergy perticulerly, for the mayntenance of that warre, because yt was not lawfull for them to beare armes. But behold, while king Edward taketh care and thowght for these matters, he fell sieke of E. 4 re. an unknownen disease ; wherfor, perceavyng himself caulyd to theнд sickie, whereof he of this lyfe, fyrst, lyke a good Chrystian man, he reconeylyd him died. to God, whom he thowght he had, by sinning oftentimes, offendyd, that whan the body wer dead, the sowle, throwghe Godes mercy, myght returne unto him ; than he made his Will, wherin he constitutyd his soones his heyres, whom he commytyd to the tuytion of Ryherd his brother, duke of Glocester, and bestowyd muche goodes devoutly. And so, within few days after, he departyd this lyfe the vth ides of Aprill, at Westmynster, whar thassembley was made, being abowt fifty yeres old, which was of his raigne the xxiiijrd, and of mans salvation M.cccc.lxxxij. His corse being caryed with

all pomp and solemnytie to Wyndsore, was ther enterryd in Saint Georges churche. He begot of Elyzabeth his wyfe ten children, wherof seven he left alyve ; two men chylldren, Edward prince of Wales, and Richerd duke of Yorke, and the third, base gotten, caulyd Arthure, of very verteuous and lovely disposytioun ; five women, Elyzabeth, Cyeyle, Anne, Catheryne, and Bryget, wherof all wer maryed save Bryget, who was made a nonne. King Edward was very taule of parsonage, exceedinge the stature almost of all others, of coomly vysage, pleasant looke, brode brestyd, the resydew even to his fete proportionably correspondant, of sharp witt, hault corage, of passing retentyve memory towching those things which he had once conceavyd, dylygent in doing his affayres, ready in perylls, earnest and horrable to thenemy, bowntyfull to his frinds and aquayntancee, most fortunate in his warres, geaven to bodily lust, wherunto he was of his owne disposition inclyned ; by reason wherof, and of humanytie which was bred in him abundantly, he wold use himself more famlylarly emong pryvate parsons than the honor of his maiestie requyryd, wherfor ther was a great rumor that he was poysonyd. A lytle before thend of his lyfe, we have sayd, that he began to slyde by lyttle and lyttle into avarice, who before had usyd towards all men hyghe lyberalytie : but after all intestine dyvision appeasyd, he left a most welthy realme abownding in all thinges, which by reason of cyvill warres he had receavyd almost utterly voyd as well of hable men as money. He had alway regard to bestow rowmes of honor, especially appertaninge to the clergy, upon every of them that wer most trew noblytee, and suche chiefly dyd he caule to his cownsill ; others of the meaner sort, whom he dyd especially favor, them did he adorne with welth, not with dynnytie, which many princees, having no regard of honor, do not ; by which vertues he had so bound to him the peoples good will as that they mournyd for him long after his death.

RICHARD THE THIRD.

POLIDORE VIRGILL OF THINGLISHE HISTORY THE XXV^{te}.
BOOKE.

RICHARD duke of Gloucester, at the self same time that his brother king Edward departyd this lyfe, was in Yorkshire, unto whom William Hastings his chamberlaine sent from London trusty messengers in post to certify him of his brothers death, and from himself to signify, that the king at his death had com- myted to him onely, wyfe, chyldeen, goodes, and all that ever he had, and therfor to exhort him, that he would with all convenient spede repare unto prince Edward into Wales, and coom with him to London to undertake the governement. Whan Richard had intelligence hereof, he began to be kyndlyd with an ardent desyre of soveraigntie; but for that ther was no cause at all whereby he might bring the same to passe that cowld eary any colour of honestie, so much as in owtward shew and appearance, he differryd the devise thereof presently unto an other time, and the meane while sent most looving letters to Elyzabeth the quene, comforting hir with many woords, and promysing on his behalf (as the proverbe is) seas and mountanes, and, to increase the credit of his carefulnes and naturall affection towards his brothers children, cawling togythers unto York thonorable and worshipfull of the countrie therabowt, he comandyd all men to sweare obedience unto prince Edward; hymself was the fyrst that tooke the othe, which soone after hee was the fyrst to vyolate. So all the resydew planely pronowncyd and sware the same. These thinges doone, having gatheryd no smaule force of armyd men, he preparyd to

Richard
swore obe-
dience unto
prince
Edwarde.

E. 4 by
his will
ordayned
his brother
protector
over his
children
and the
realme.

set forward when time should serve. Prince Edward, being but a child in yeares not hable to rewle hymself, lay the same time within his princypalтиe at Ludlow, under the tuytion of his uncle Anthony earle Ryvers, Thomas Vaughan chief of his chamber, and Richard Gray, knights. Elyzabeth the quene, and Thomas marquise Dorset, hir soonn by John Gray hir former husband, who was at London, advysyd these men by often messages to conduct the prince furthwith to London, that after the funeralls of his father solemnzyed, he might, after the maner of his auncesters, be crownyd king. They according to the quenes and marquyses commandment tooke there journey not long after towards London. Richard also hastenyd thyther, whom Henry duke of Buckingham met at Northampton, with whom the duke of Glocester had long conference, in so muche that as is commonly beleeved he eaven then discoveryd to Henry his intent of usurpyng the kingdom, and especyally for because the duke folowyng afterwards his humor, whether yt were for feare or for obedience, held ever with him. And so Richerd from thencefurth determynyd to assay his purposyd spytfull practyse by subtyltie and sleight, which yf by that meane should not faule owt so fortunately as he hopyd, than lastelye, with malice apert, to attempt the same; not myndyng, myserable man, that he could offend therin withoutt extreme detryment of the commonwelth, and thutter subversion of his howse. Surely so yt happeneth to graceles people, that who seketh to overthrow an other, his owne frawd, wicked and mischevous intent, his owne desperate boldenes, maketh him frantyke and mad.

And thus whan they had taken cownsell Rycherd made haste unto the prince, who journayd on before with a smawle trayne, and was now coomyd to Stony Stratfoorth (so ys the towne caulyd) whan he, togyther with Henry the duke gardyd with a bande of soldiers, overtooke the prince and receavyd him into his

Richard
tooke
possession
of the
prince.

rewle and goverment; but he apprehendyd Anthony and Thomas Vawghan, and dyvers other, whom after he had taken, supposyng that they wold not assent to his intent and purpose, he sent bak to be kept in ward at Pounfrayt castle.

But whan the fame of so owtrageous and horryste fact cam to London, all men wer woonderously amasyd, and in great feare, but especially Elyzabeth the quene was much dismayed, and determinyd furthwith to fly; for, suspecting eaven than that ther was no plane dealing, to thintent she might deliyer her other children from the present danger, she convayed hirself with them and the marquise into the sayntuary at Westmynster. The very same dyd other noble men who wer of hir mynde for the safegard of hir chyldren. But the lord Hastings who bare pryvy hatryd to the marquis and others of the quenes syde, who for that cause had exhortyd Richerd to take upon him the government of the prince, whan he saw all in uprore and that matters fell owt otherwyse than he had wenyd, repenting therfor that whiche he had doone, caulyd together unto Powles churche suche frindes as he knew to be right carefull for the lyfe, dynnytye, and estate of prince Edward, and conferryd with tham what best was to be doone. Here divers of them who wer most offendyd with thys late fact of Richerd duke of Gloucester, adjudgyd yt mete with all sped to procure the lybertie of prince Edward, whom they acountyd as utterly oppressyd and wrongyd by force and violence, that so the fyre, which was kyndling, myght be put owt before yt showld sprede further abrode; affirming that from thencefurth no devyse wold be voyd of danger except the wicked enterpryse, which gave good testymony that duke Richard had inwardly no good meaning, wer with present force avoydyd. All the resydew thowght that ther was no nede to use war or weapon at all, as men who little suspectyd that the matter wold have any horryste and cruell end. Wherfore they concludyd to tary whyle duke Richard

Anthony
Woodvill,
Tho.

Vaughan
and others
sent pri-
soners to
Pomfrette
castell.

Q. Eliza-
beth with
her other
childdrene
and the
marques
Dorsete
tooke
sanktuary.

should coom and declare what the matter was, why he had cast them who had the prince in government into prison. And this resolution fynally lyked them all, because in appearance yt stood with the profyt of the commonwelth that every of the nobylty, as much as might be, showld avoyd varyance and contention. Not long after arryvyd the duke Richard and Henry with the prince, and lodgyd at the bishopp of Londons howse besydes Powles, wher ther will was the prince showld remane till other matters myght be put in readynes. Than dyd duke Rycherd assume the governement wholy; but yt grevyd him spytefully that he might not receave into his tuition, without some great stere, his brothers other soon Richerd duke of York, whom his mother kept in sayntuarye; for, except he might get them both togethers into his powr and custody, he utterly desperyd to compasse that which he longyd for. Conceaving therfor soome hope therein, he bent all the forces of his wyt how to wrest and bereve him from his mothers lap. And so, as he had purposyd, he laboryd to bring abowt by sleight which by force he could not, who cawling to him a good number of the noblytie, sayd: ‘I pray God that I never lyve yf I be not carefull for the commodytie of my nephews, whose calamytie I know well must nede redownd lyke-wyse to the commonwelth and myself also. Therfor, seing that my broother Edward owr king dyd uppon his death-bed constytute and appoint me Protector of the Realme, I had more regard of nothing than to repare hyther and bring with me prince Edward his eldest soon, that in time convenient all things might be doone by thadvise of cownsaile; for I am determinyd to do nothing withoutt your authoryties, whom I am willing to have myne associates, ayders, and partakers in all dealinges, that you thereby may well beare wytnes what soever I shall from hencefurth do as touching the government of the realme, the same wholy to be employed, feythfully, and withoutt fraud, for thutlytie

The prince
and
Richerd D.
of Gloster
lodged at
the bus-
hope of
Londones
house.

of the commonwealth, and the commodytie of prince Edward, the charge and government of whom I suppose you know suffycyently that his father commytyd to me for that onely cause. But An-
 tony Rivers attemptyd of late to hinder me, that I showld not accordeyng to my dewty take on hand that charge, whom therfor we have bene compellyd to commyt with others who also made resystance therein, that by ther examples other men might learne not to have ovr commandments in contempt. But what shall we say of the evell cownsayle which they who most maligne and hate me have geaven to quene Elizabeth? who, withoutt any just cause, cownterfayting feare so folyshly, hath enterprysyd to cary in all haste the kings children as wicked, wretched, and desperate nawghtie parsons into sayntuary, thonly refuge in earth of povertie, det, and lewd behavyor, as though we went abowt to destroy them, and that all ovr doinges tendyd to violence. Which thyng, thowghe yt be exceeding great dishonor to us and the whole realme, yet the sex ys to be borne withall, from the which such rages readyly procede. But we are to provyde remedy betimes for this womanishe disease creping into ovr commonwelthe, to the woort example trewly that may be. What a sight I pray you shalle yt be to se the day wherin the king shalbe crownyd, yf, whyle that the solemntyie of tryumphant pomp is in doyng, his mother, brother, and sisters shalbe remane in sayntuary? What manner of concourse of people shalle ther be, by whose authoryty he is to be creatyd king? What signe of rejoicing shalle that assemble geave unto the soveraigne, the same being more full of hevynes than exultation? Surely ther is not one amonkest all the people who may not justly be in feare of himself, and think that all majestie of lawis is already violated, yf the Quene and hir chyldren shalle remaine any longer in sayntuary! May yt lyke yow therfor that soom of yow go to the quene hirself, and procure the reducyng of hir and hir children as soone as may be into the

A resone
shewed
whie the
earle of
Rivers and
others were
comytted.

Persons
sente to
treate with
the Q. in
sanctuary.

palace, whom, yf peradventure yow shalbe hable by no meane to withdraw from hir opynyon, as sedueyd by them who loove mee not, who study to stirre up envy against mee, to lay some fault uppon me, yeast at the least to deale that she may uppon generall assurance yealde Richerd thother soon into your handes, so that he may be present with other noble men at his brothers coronation. Yow have already my mynde, do now what yow think best in the behalf of the commonwelth; for at my hand yow both may and owght to expect all that is good and honorable.' Whan he had spoken these woordes all men who suspectyd no subtyltie thought duke Richardes advyse both mete and honest. And so yt was agreyd that Thomas archebisshop of Canterbury, Henry duke of Buchyngame, John lord Howard, and sundry other grave men should deale in that cause, who reparing unto the sayntuary began to perswade the quene with many fayre wordes and perswations that she wold returne with hir children into the palace, unto whom they gave both pryuate and publyke assurance; but the woman, forseing in a sort within hir self the thing that folowyd furthwith after, could not be movid with any perswations to commyt hir self to the credyt of duke Ryherd, which whan they understoode, fynally they demandyd to be delyveryd to them hir soon Richard onely, which they obtaynyd hardly after many fayre promises. And so was thinnocent chyld pullyd owt of his mothers arnes.

Richard,
the princes
yoncer
brother,
delivered
oute of
sanctuary.

The prince
and his
brother
removed to
the Towere.

Richard having by this meane obtaynyd almost his hartes desire, convaighed his nephewys from the bysshop of Londons howse unto the Towre; and yeast all this causyd no suspytion, for that thusage ys at the kings coronation for the whole assembly to coom out from thence solemnly, and so proceede to Westmynster. This doone, Richerd, whose mynde partly was enflamyd with desire of usurping the kyngdom, partly was trubbllyd by guyltynes of intent to commyt so haynous wickednes (for a guiltie con-

science causeth thoffendor to have dew punishment alway in imagination before his eyes), thowght afirward nothing better than to mollyfy the multitude with largesse and lyberalytie, than to wyn the hartes of his adversaryes with gyttes, rewardes, and promyses, than in the Towr, wher himself and his nephews remayned, to consult, conferre, and delyberate of new with the noble men dayly in most craftie and subtyle maner for the dealing and disposing of suche thinges as wer furthwith to be doone. And this was his dryft, that, whyle stayng and taryng made the people desyrus of this solemne sight, he, by consultinge from poynt to poynt, might sound and serche out how the noblytie was affected, saying alway that he did not seke the soveraigntie, but referryd all his dooings to the profyt of the realme. Thus covering and cloking certane days his desire, under the colour and pretence of common welthe, he so enveglyd the myndes of the nobilitye, that they all, few only exceptyd who wer not ignorant from the beginning what marke he shot at, dyd by no meane espy the cause of his lingering, or to what ende his practyses wold faule owt, so many matters dyd he so often propone and so few explane, according as a guyltie conseynee ys wont to be of many myndes. But in the mean time perceaving that William lord Hastings was most vehement and earnest to have prince Edward once crowned king, who chiefly amongst all the noblytie was, for his bountifullnes and lyberalytie, much beloved of the common people, bearing great sway emong all sortes of men and parsons of best reputation, whether yt wer that he fearyd his powr, or desparyd yt possible to draw him to his syde and opynyon, he determinyd to ryd the man owt of the way before his purpose shoulde be discovryd to the resydew, whom he did not yett fully trust. Wherfor, burning with rage incredible to bring to effect the thing which in mynd was resolvyd, he drew a plot for the lord Hastings as foloweth : he placyd pryyvly in a chamber adjoyning to that with

Wm. lo.
Hastings
by practys
slain in the
Tower.

himself and other lords sat usually in cownsayll a sort right ready to do a mischiefe, geaving them in charge that when he showld geave a signe they showlด suddenly rushe owt, and, compassing about them who shold syt with him, to lay handes specyally upon William lord Hastings, and kill him forthwith. This trayne thus layd, abowt the day before the ides of June he commanded to be sent for specyally by name Thomas Retheram archebisshop of York, John Morton bysshop of Ely, Henry duke of Buckingham, Thomas lord Stanley, William lord Hastings, John lord Haward, and many others whom he trustyed to fynde faythal ether for feare or benefyt. The resydew of the nobyltie, togethers with John Russell bishop of Lincoln, lord chaneelor of England, whom his will was not to have present at suche an owt-rageous and fowle spectacle, he commanded to be the same day at Westminster haule, with other magistrates, to proclaim the day of prince Edward's coronation. But the nobles who wer cawled came well early all into the Towr as to delyberate of the whole matter. Here, whan the doores was shutt, whyle they thus alone without testimony of any other than onely God, had goodwill to consult of the most weightie affayres, Richard duke of Glocestre, who thowght of nothing but tyranny and crueltie, spak unto them in this sort: ‘My lords, I have procuryd you all to be eaulyd hyther this day for that onely cause that I might shew unto you in what great danger of death I stand; for by the space of a few days by past nether nyght nor day can I rest, drynk, nor eat, wherfor my blood by lyttle and lyttle decreaseth, my force fayleth, my breath shorteneth, and all the partes of my body do above measure, as you se (and with that he shewyd them his arme), faule away; which mischief veryly procedeth in me from that sorceres Elyzabeth the quene, who with hir witchcraft hath so enchantyd me that by thanoyance thereof I am dissolvyd.’ To these sainges whan no man gave answer, as making lyttle to the purpose, William

lord Hastings, who hatyd not duke Richerd, and was woont to speke all thinges with him very frely, awnsweryd, that the quene deservyd well both to be put to open shame, and to be dewly punysshyd, yf yt might appeare that by use of witcheraft she had doone him any harme. To these Rycherd replyed : ‘ I am undone (I say) by that very woomans soreery.’ Whereunto William made the same awnswere that befor. Than Rycherd, to geve a sygne for them who wer without layd pryyly for the nonce, spak with more shirle voyce : ‘ What than, William, yf by thine owne practises I be brought to destruction ? ’ He had scarce utteryd these woordes whan as they to whom charge was commyttyd in that behalf yssewyd, and with open assault apprehendyd all at once William lord Hastings, both the bysshops of York and Ely, and also the lord Stanley. These thre last wer cast ther into severall prisons ; but William lord Hastings had scarce leysure to make his confession before his head was stryk from his shoulders. So the lord Hastings learnyd, by his owne losse at the last, that the law of nature wherof the gospell speaketh (what soever you will that men do unto yow, do you so also unto them) can not be broken without punishment. He was one of the smyters of prince Edward, king Henry the vjths. soon, who was fynally quyt with like maner of death. Would God suche kind of examples might once be a learning for them who think yt lawfull to do whatsoever lyketh them. Now I returne to the matter. As soone as this dede was doone they cryed treason, treason throwght the whole towre; which noyse whan it sprede abrode throwght the cytie the citecyns and all other people, takyng the fyrst rumor to be trew, and ignorant of that which was doone within, began to cry owt lykewyse ; but after that they understoode, by terryble speache brutyd abrode, the truthe of the matter doon within, then began every man on his owne behalfe to feare the hurt of inward enemyes, and to look for nothing els but cruell slawghter or myscrable flight ; and all

The
bisshopes
of York
and Ely
and the
Lord Stan-
ley were
committed
to severall
prisons.

men generally lamentyd the death of that man, in whom both they and the nobles who favoryd kinge Edwardes children had reposyd their whole hope and confydence. Now perceavyd they well that duke Richerd wold spare no man so that he might obtainy the kingdom, and that he would convert the regall authoritye into Lord Stan-
ley re-
leased. tyranny. But the duke after this, being satisfyed with the death of William lord Hastings, delyveryd Thomas lord Stanley safe and sounld, fearing, perchance, least yf he showld have doone him any wrong George lord Strange his soon showld have stirred upp the people to armes soomwher agaynst him. As for John Morton bysshop of Ely, who dyd farre excede them all in wysdome and gravytie, him he commytyd to the duke of Buckingham, whom the duke sent furthwith into Wales to his castle at the towne of Brechmoch. But Thomas Rotheram archebishop of York he committed to the custody of sir James Tirrell, knight. His meaning was to make those bisshops sure whom he thought wold not alow upon his purposyd intent, until that, having gotten the soveraigntie, he showld nede to feare no man.

Order
geven to
behead
Anthony
Rivers,
Richard
Graye, and
Thomas
Vaughan. Whan these thinges wer doone, Richard, knowinge then for certane that ther was no cause why he showld any further dissemble the matter, sent his letters of warrant to the keper of Pontfreyt castle to behead in hast Anthony lord Ryvers, Richerd Gray, and Thomas Vaghan, which was doone soone after. In the meane whyle, himself at London, fearing now all thinges, garded first his parson with a company of armed men, then after sowght with all dylygence to wyn unto hym the chief of the noblytie by large gyftes and fayre promyses, a good part wherof he drew unto his amytie, sedueyd rather for feare than for hope of benefyt; by the suportation of whose puyssance and authortie he determinyd to attempt soone after an other devyse. For surely he was owt of all hepe to be hable so to bynde the comonaltie to him by rewardes, as that they wold willingly away with his government,

who he knew well wold, for defence of lyberty and conservation of the royll right, be readyly stirryd to take weapon in hand, wherfor he feared them. Therupon, revolvinge many matters in his mynde, at last he bethowght him of a devyse wherby the people, being seduceyd by a certain honest pretence, should the lesse grudge at his doinges. And so the man, being blinde with covetousnes of raigning, whom no fowle fact cowld now hold bak, after that he had resolvyd not to spare the bloode of his owne howse, supposing also all regard of honor was to be rejectyd, de-
 vysyd and bethowght himselfe of suche a sleyght as foloweth :
 He had secret conuference with one Raphe Sha, a divyne of great Richards
 reputation as than emong the people, to whom he utteryd, that Practise
 his fathers inherytance ought to descend to him by right, as the Sha, a
 eldest of all the soones which Richard his father duke of York preacher,
 had begotten of Cecyly his wyfe ; for as much as yt was manyfest in a sermon at
 ynowghe, and that by apparent argument, that Edward, who had Powles
 before raignyd, was a bastard, that ys, not begotten of a right and Crosse his
 lawfull wyfe ; praying the said Sha to instruct the people therof in clayme.
 a sermon at Powles Crosse, wherby they might once in the ende
 acknowledge ther rew liege lord. And sayd that he greatly re-
 quyred the same, because he estemyd yt more mete to neglect his
 mothers honor and honestie than to suffer so noble a realme to be
 pollutyd with suche a race of kinges. This Raphe, whether dasyd
 with feare, or bereft his wyts, promysed to folow, and obey his
 commandment. But whan the day caine, duke Richard, who,
 under the colour of serving another tourne, had made himselfe
 mightie, came in royal maner, with a great gard of men armyd,
 unto the churche of St. Paule, and ther was attentyvely present
 at the sermon, in whose hearing Raphe Sha, a learnyd man, taking
 occasion of set purpose to treat not of divyne but tragical dis-
 cours, began to instruct the people, by many reasons, how that
 the late king Edward was not begotten by Richard duke of York,

but by soome other, who pryyly and by stelth had had knowledge of his mother ; and that the same did manyfestly appeare by sure demonstrations, because king Edward was nether in physnomy nor shape of body lyke unto Richard the father ; for he was highe of stature, thother very little ; he of large face, thother short and rownd. Howbeyt, yf suche matters were well consyderyd, no man could dowt but Richard, now in place, was the dukes trew soone, who by right owght to inheryt the realme dew to his father ; and therfor he exhortyd the noblytie, seing they presently wantyd a king, to make ther king Richard duke of Gloucester, the trew yssue of the royll bloode, and to forsake all others basely begot. Whan the people herd these woordes, they wer woonderus vehemently trublyd in mind therwith, as men who, abasshyd with the shamefulnes of the matter, all to be cursyd and detestyd as well the rashnes, foolehardynes, and doltishnes of the preacher as the madnes of Richard the duks wycked mynde, who wold not se how great shame yt was to his owne howse and to the whole realme, how great dishonour and blot, to condemne, in open audience, his mother of adultery, a woman of most pure and honorable life ; to impreynt upon his excellent and good brother the note of perpetuall infamy ; to lay upon his most innocent nephews an everlasting reproche. Wherfor at the very instant yow might have sene soome, astonyed with the noveltie and strangenes of the thing, stand as mad men in a mase ; others, all agast with thowtrageous crueltie of thorrible fact, to be in great feare of themselves because they war frindes to the kinges children ; others, fynally, to bewayle the misfortune of the chyldren, whom they adjudgyd now utterly undoone. But ther ys a common report that king Edwards chyldren wer in that sermon cauld basterdes, and not king Edward, which is voyd of all truthe ; for Cecyly king Edwards mother, as ys before sayd, being falsely accusyd of adultery, complaynd afterward in sundry places to right many noble men, wherof

soome yeat lyve, of that great injury which hir soon Richard had doon hir. But Richard, whan his mother was thus openly defamyd as an adulteress, and a slander publysshed upon Edward his brother, was no whit ashamyd, as he ought to have bene, but, rejoysing that a matter was boltyd owt in the face of the world wherby he sought to make apparent to all men that he had good right to the realme, returnyd into the toure with a royal trane, as thowe he had bene of the magistrates proclamyd king. But Raphe Sha, the publisher of thablonynablenes of so weightie a cause, (who not long after acknowledgyd his error, throwgh the grevous rebukes of his fryndes that wer ashamyd of his infamy,) so sore repentyd the doing therof that, dying shortly for very sorow, he suffered worthie punishment for his lewdnes.

Sha the
preacher at
his death
acnoleged
his errore.

Now by these meanes was yt thought that duke Richard had attaynyd the soverayntie, and the same was every wher so reported, thowgh more for aw than good will; whan, for feare of perilles hanging every way over his head, he resolvyd that of necessitie yt was mete to stay a whyle, notwithstanding many of his frindes urgyd him to utter himself planely, and to dispache at once that which remayned, yeat, least his doinges might easly be myslykyd, his desire was that the people might be earnestly delt withall, and the whole matter referryed to the determinyation of others as judges in that behalfe. And so, abowt the xijth calends of June, he commandyd the judges and magistrates of the cytie, Robert Bylls, lord mayr, Thomas Norland and William Maryn, shyriffes, with thaldermen, to assemble in the yeald hawle, and to them he sent the duke of Buckingham, with dyvers other noble-men that wer of his counsayll, to deale in his cause, and in his name to requyre that they, hearing the reasons concerning the dispache of so weyghtie affayer, wold deere that which stoode with the welthe of the whole realme and of thinhabytantes therof. The duke of Buckingham delyveryd, in long proces, duke Ry-

The duke
of Buck-
ingham and
other lords
sent to
publishe
Richards
title in the
yeld halle
London.

chards mynd, and in his behalf declaryd that ther was not to enforce the cause any other thing but right, loyaltie, constancy, honesty, and equytie, seing he demaundyd the kingdom from the which he had bene defraudyd before by his broother Edward, and therfor prayed that by ther authorytie they wold deale and determiny of so weyghtie a matter, wherbie he might, with good will of the commonaltie, who wold be rewlyd by ther judgement, enjoy once at the last his royall right, which wold be for the profyt of the common welth; for as muche as duke Richard was of that wysdom and modestie that all men might well hope for, at his hand, both right and reason. This was the dukes demand and determinynation also, agaynst which, because wher force ys right beareth no rewle, no man durst gaynsay. But Richard duke of Gloucester, as thowgh the terryfyed judges had decreyd of his syde, rode the next day after from the Towr throughgh the myddest of the cytie unto Westmynster, in robes royall, and gardyd with fyrm force of armyd men, syttinge in the royall seat. He then fyrist of all tooke uppon him as king; for some matters he determinynd, others he promysyd he wold heare; to the magistrats he gave in commandment that from thencefurth they showld do all thinges in his name; also he apoynted a day for all the people and noblytie to mete, and be ready to sweare him homage. Whan the fame of these doinges wer spread abrode throughgh all partes of the realme, they wer dyversly taken: for who so wer of king Edwards and the howse of Yorke part detestyd the presumptuous boldnes of duke Richard as a very pestylence that fynally wold consume and utterly ruynat that howse. Agane, who so held in hart with king Henry the Sixt thowght that all those thinges wold be for ther advantage, because within short time yt wold fawl owt that the rigor of Rychardes government wold be intollerable to every man, and that the noblytie, for the exterpynge utterly therof before yt showld take any depe roote, wold, without

Richard
went to
Westmin-
ster and
published
his pur-
poses.

dowt, yeald ther allegiance unto Henry earle of Richemond, king Henries brothers soon, and send for him to be king. Richard, in the meane time, according as his force and tyranny well requyred, was afeard least that many should becoome the quenes frynds, and procure the commonaltie to commotyon, whan they should see the crowne bereft from prince Edward; therfor he commandyd furthwith five thousand soldiers which wer levyed in Yorkshyre (for to them he most trustyd) to be sent unto him, under the conduct of Rychard Ratelyf, and gave to him in charge to disparte dyvers thinges by the way. Hee, gardyd with that compayne, stayed at Poyntfrayt, and commandyd the keper of the castle to put to death Anthony Lord Ryvers, Rychard Gray, and Thomas Vaughan, as the Glocestryan had commandyd (according as I have before wrytten), that by reason of his presence such an horrable fact might be executyd without uprore, which doone he conducted his company to London. Richard, thus garded with that number of faythfull and trusty soldiers, attemptyd confydently to execute all other things. And so, having assemblyd togyther a company of the noblytie, he was creatyd king at Westmynster the day before the nones of July, and adornyd with the regall diademe, togethry with Anne his wyfe, the people rather not repyning for feare than allowing therof, and was cawlyd Rychard the iijrd. That was the yere of mans salvation m.cccc.lxxxiiij.

Thus Richerd, without assent of the commonaltie, by might and will of certane noblemen of his faction, enjoyned the realme, contrary to the law of God and man; who, not long after, having establi shyd all thinges at London according to his owne fantasy, tooke his journey to York, and first he went streight to Gloucester, where the whyle he taryed the haynous guylt of wicked consyence dyd so freat him every moment as that he lyvyd in contynuall feare, for thespelling wherof by any kind of meane he determynyd by death to disparte his nephewys, because so long as they lyvyd

Anthony
Rivers,
Richard
Graye,
Tho.
Vaughan
executed.

R. 3
crowned at
Westmin-
ster.

Order
geven to
the leef-
tenant of the
towere to
murthere
the younge
princes.

he could never be out of hazard ; wherefore he sent warrant to Robert Brakenbury, lyvetenant of the towr of London, to procure ther death with all diligence, by some meane convenient. From thence he departyd to York, wher he was joyfully receavyd of the cyteeyns, who for his comyng mayd certane days publyk and open tryumph ; but king Richard, that he might advance himself openly to all men, yea to the country people (so desyrus was he to prowle after vane plause and congratulation), denouneyd a day wherin the archbissop of York, at his request, apoyntyd general procession, in the solemnytie wherof himself and the quene

Edward E.
of War-
wick, son
to George
duke of
Clarence,
sent pri-
soner to
Seryhoo-
ton castle.

went crownyd. King Richard caryed with him Edward earle of Warweke, the soone of his brother George duke of Clarence, by reason of whom least any danger might to himself be deryvyd, he sent him to be kept in ward at a castle caulyd Shyriff Huton. But the lyvetenant of the towr at London after he had receavyd the kinges horrable commyssion was astonyed with the creweltie of the fact, and fearing least yf he showld obey the same might at one time or other turne to his owne harme, dyd therfor dyffler

Braken-
bury re-
fused to
be the
murtherer
of the
princes.

the dooing therof in hope that the kinge wold spare his owne bloode, or ther tender age, or alter that heavy determinynation. But any one of those poynts was so fur from taking place, seing that the mynd therin remanyd immovable, as that when king Richard understoode the lyvetenant to make delay of that which he had commandyd, hee anon commytyd the charge of hastening

James
Tyrrell was
made leef-
tenant of
the towre
who per-
formed the
exployt.

that slawghter unto another, that is to say James Tyrrell, who, being foreyd to do the kings commandment, rode sorrowfully to London, and, to the woorst example that hath been almost ever hard of, murderyd those babes of thyssew royall. Thys end had Prince Edward and Richarde his brother ; but with what kinde of death these sely chylldren wer executyd yt is not certanely known. But king Richard, delyveryd by this fact from his care and feare, kept the slaughter not long secret, who, within few days after,

permyttd the rumor of ther death to go abrode, to thintent (as we may well beleve) that after the people understoode no yssue male of king Edward to be now left alyve, they might with better mynde and good will beare and sustayne his governement. But whan the fame of this notable fowle fact was dispersyd throughe the realme, so great grieve stroke generally to the hertes of all men, that the same, subdewing all feare, they wept every wher, and whan they could wepe no more, they cryed owt, ‘Ys ther trewly any man lyving so farre at enemytie with God, with all that holy ys and relygyouse, so utter enemy to man, who wold not have abhorryd the myschief of so fowle a murder?’ But speccially the quenes frinds and the chyldrens exclamyd against him, ‘What will this man do to others who thus cruelly, without any ther desert, hath killyd hys owne kynsfolk?’ assuring themselves that a marvalous tyrany had now invadyd the commanwelth. Emongest all others the news herof was unto thynfortunate mother, who yeat remanyd in sayntuary, as yt wer the very stroke of death: for as soone as she had intelligence how her soons wer bereft thys lyfe, at the very fyrst motion therof, the owtrageousnes of the thinge drove her into suche passion as for feare furthwith she fell in a swowne, and lay lyvels a good whyle; after cooming to hir self, she wepeth, she cryeth owt alowd, and with lamentable shrykes made all the house ring, she stryk hir brest, teare and cut hir heire, and, overcomynd in fyne with dolor, prayeth also hir owne death, cawlyng by name now and than emong hir most deare chyldren, and condemning hirself for a mad woman, for that (being deceavyd by false promyses) she had delyveryd hir yownger soon owt of sayntuary, to be murderyd of his enemy, who, next unto God and hir soons, thought hir self most injuryrd; but after long lamentation, whan otherwise she cowld not be revengyd, she besowght help of God (the revenger of falshed and treason) as assuryd that he wold once revenge the same. What man ys

ther in this world, who, yf he have regard unto suche noble children thus shamefully murderid, wyll not tremble and quake, seing that suche matters often happen for thoffences of our ancestors, whose faults doo redownd to the posterytie? That fortunyd peradventure to these two innocent imps because Edward ther fathyr commytted thoffence of perjury, by reason of that most solemne othe which (as we have in the former booke mentionyd) he tooke at the gates of the cytie of York, meaning one thing inwardly and promysyng an other in expresse woordes outwardly, as furthwith appearyd: and for that afterwardes, by reason of his brother the duke of Clarence death, he had chargyd himself and his posterytie before God with dew desert of grevous punysshement.

Whyle this stere was abrode otherwher, the day of generall procession was at hand, wherin ther was great confluence of people, for desire of beholding the new king. In which procession very solemnly set furth and celebratyd by the clergy, the king was present in parson, adornyd with a notable riche dyaderne, and accompanied with a great number of noble men: the quene folowyd also with a crowne upon hir head, who led by the hand hir soon Edward crownyd also with so great honor, joy, and congratulation of thinhabytants, as in shew of rejoysing they extollyd king Richard above the skyes.

R. 3
somoned a
parliament
at York.

John Howard made
duke of Norfolk
and his
soone E.
of Surrey.

Whan this solemne pomp of prayer was fynysshdyd, the king not long after cawlyd a parlyament, in the which, after many matters wer establishid towching the state of that province, his only soon Edward, abowt ix^{ne} yeres owld, was made prince of Wales, and John Haward, a man very pollytyke and skilfull in warres, was made duke of Norfolk, and his soon Thomas, a lusty and noble young gentleman, earle of Surrey. Also the number of the kinges cownsayll was augmentyd with soom noble men of that countre, because king Richerd had in ther fidelytie most confydence as we have before declaryd. Fynally, because ther was no myschyef, none adversytie, which the kinges

head, guiltie of so many crymes, dyd not mystrust, provysyon was made that the kings enemyes, desyrus to disturb all things, might not be hable to caule home againe into England Henry earle of Richemond. And so Thomas Hutton, a man of pregnant wyt, was appoyntyd ambassador to deale with the duke of Brytayn by all force of fayre woords and money that he wold detane the erle in perpetuall prysone at the least, according as he had doone hytherto at the request of his brother Edward, who transportyd furthwith into Brytayny. Whan these thinges wer done the king returnyd to London, whom all the eyty for dewties sake cam furth to mete. Thus had kinge Richerd by a strange kinde of owrageous creweltie attayned the tyope of glory and promotion, and in the eye of the people was accountyd a happy man, whan as soon after he perceavyd himself to declyne from his state by lyttle and lyttle, that he could not kepe fast therein by any pollicy. Surely after the murder of king Edwardes soons as oft as any evell storme was presently immynent or lyke to ensew, the people, remembryng suddaynly the kings late abhomynable fact, layd the blame thereof only uppon him, exclamynge that God did revenge the kinges wickednes upon the powr Englishe people; whom therfor they accusyd, detestyd, and fynally besowght God to take extreame vengeance uppon. Thus when king Richard was spoken of at all hands, and though hee [was] not ignorant from whom these speaches dyd proceude, yet for all that durst not by violence revenge the same, supposing yt an unwyse part not to beare soom time with suche as towld him of his fault, he fell agane from so great felycyte into a feare and heavynes of hart, and, because he could not reforme the thing that was past, he determinyd to abholishe by all dewtyfulnes the note of infamy wherewith his honor was staynyd, and to geave suche hope of his good governement that from thencefurth no man showld be hable to lay any calamytie that might happen to the commonwelth unto

Thomas
Hutton
sent am-
bassador
to the duke
of Brittany
to detayne
the erle of
Richmond
in prison.

his charge. But hard yt ys to alter the naturall disposition of ones mynde, and suddaynly to exterp the thing therin settlyd by dayly conversation. And so, whether yt wer for that cause, or (as the brute commonly goeth) because he now repented of his evell dedes, he began afterward to take on hand a certane new forme of lyfe, and to geave the shew and countenance of a good man, wherby he might be accowntyd more righteous, more mylde, better affectyd to the commonaltie, and more lyberall especially toward the powr; and so first might meryte pardon for his offences at Gods hand; than after appease partly the envy of man, and procure himself good will, he began many woorks as well publick as pryvate, which (being prevented by death before his tyme) he perfyted not. He fowndyd a colledge at York of an hundred priests. Also he began now to geave eare to the good admonition of his frindes.

R. 3
founded a
Colledge at
York.

But anon after yt appearyd evydent that feare, which seldom causeth continewance of dewtyfull dealing, made king Richard so suddainly good, for as much as the bowntyfulnesse of the man beinge but counterfayt waxed cold agane quickly; by reason wherof all his proposyd practyses began straightway to coom to naught. For fyrst he lost Edward his only soon the third month after he had bene made prince of Wales; after that, a conspyracye was contrivyd agaynst him by meane of Henry duke of Buckingham, which, though yt wer by one of the conspyrators discoveryd before yt grew great, yeat was he trublyd in suppressing therof. And for as muche as we be now coomyd to this place, yt is nedefull to make convenient rehersall of certane things premysyd wherby we may explane the first cause of the discord begun betwixt the king and the duke: for Humfrey soomtyme erle of Hereforde, of whose death we have made mention before in the xviiith. booke, left of his body begotten two dawghters, and them he made his heyres; that ys to say, Mary who maryed to Henry erle of Darby, theldest soon to John duke of Lancaster,

His son
prince
Edward
diede.

The dis-
cencion
betwixt R.
3 and the
duke of
Bucking-
ham.

who aftirward having gotten the crowne was caulyd Henry the Fourth, and Alyenore whom Thomas of Woodstok duke of Glocester and erle of Buckingham tooke in maryage. Of this Thomas and Alyenore yssewyd and remanyd onely alive one dowghter caulyd Anne, to whom by right discendyd after the confiscation of hir fathers possessions in the time of Richard the Second, who put the duke to death, hir mother Alyenors inherytance. This lady was first handfast to Thomas Stafford, but he dying before marriage, she also beinge but very young, was afterward maryed to Edmund brother of the sayd Thomas erle of Stafforth. He begot Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and Humfrey Henry. And so by the maryage of Anne and Mary was therle of Herefoords inherytance devydyd, thone moytie to thowse of Lancaster, thothe to the bloode of Staffoords, from whom the dukes of Buckingham deryve ther pedygre. And after a few yeres all the rase of king Henry the Fourth faylyd in prince Edward, Henry the Syxtes soon: which howse extynguyshyd, Henry of Buckingham thowght that he might by good right demand that part of therle of Herefords patrimony which in the right of Mary had coommyd to the howse of Lancaster, which than king Richard held in right of the crown, with thothe possessions of the howse of Lancaster. Therfor the duke within few days after, having gotten fytt occasion to talke of the matter, demandyd of king Richerd that part of therle of Herefoordes patrymony that to him by right of inherytance was dew. To this king Richerd, who supposyd that matter to have bene now forgotten, ys reportyd to have awnswered furthwith in great rage: ‘What now, duke Henry, will yow chalenge unto you that right of Henry the Fourth wherby he wyckedly usurpid the crowne, and so make open for yourself the way therunto?’ Which king Richerds awnswer settlyd depe into the dukes breste, who from that time furth, moyyd muche with ire and indignation, began to devyse by what meane he might thrust

The duke
of Buck-
ingham
demanded
of the
kinge his
part of the
E. of
Herefords
lands.

owt that ungratefull man from the royll seat for whose cause he had right often doone many thinges agaynst his owne conseynce otherwise than before God he lawfully might. The duke thus affectyd accompanied king Richerd not long after as he journeyed towarde Yorke unto Glocester, from thence with his consent he repayred into Wales, wher a great part of his lyvings lay. Heare the while of his tary, provokyd partly by freshe memory of the late receavyd injury, partly repenting that hitherto of himself hee had not resystyd king Richardes evell enterpryse, but much had furtheryd the same, he resolvyd to seperate himself from him (though in dede he showlde so have doon in the begynnyng), and to bring to passe the thing which he had long revolvyd

A consultation between the duke of Buckingham and the bishope touching the earl of Richmonds title.
in mynde: and so he began to discover his intent to John bisshop of Ely, whom (as we have before remembryd) he had in Brechnoch castle. The bisshop suspecting treason, demandeth why he goeth abowt that matter, and prayeth to do him no harm; afterward whan he understood his just cause of hatred, which king Richerd had well deservyd long ago, he refusyd not to conferre of the conspiraey. Than the duke unfoldyd all thynges to the bisshop of Ely, and dycoveryd himself wholy, shewing how he had devysyd the meane wherby both the bloode of king Edward and of Henry the Sixth that yeat was remaining, being conjoignyd by affinytie, might be restoryd to the domynion dew unto both ther progenyes. The meane was this, that Henry erle of Richemond, who (as the report went) was, after knowledge of king Edwardes death, delyveryd by Francys duke of Brytayne owt of prison, might be sent for in all hast possyble, and assystyd with all that they might do, so that he wold promyse before by solemne othe, that after he had once obtaynyd the kingdom he wold take to wyfe Elyzabeth, king Edwards eldest dawghter.

The bishop of Ely alowyd as well the dukes devyse as the maner of performing the same, and procuryd one Renold Bray,

servant to Margaret erle Henry his mother, who had maryed Thomas lord Standley, to coome unto the duke into Wales, and his pleasure knownen to returne spedely unto the said Margaret, and certify hir of all thinges which had bene delyberatyd betwixt him and the duke concernyng common saftie. This trewly was the matter for the which dissencion sprang betwyxt the king and the duke, and wherupon the conspyracy was made agaynst him. But the comon report was otherwyse; for the multytude sayd that the duke dyd the lesse diss Wade kinge Richerd from usurping the kingdome, by meane of so many mischievous dedes, uppon that intent that he afterward, being hatyd both of God and man, might be expellyd from the same, and so himself be caulyd by the commons to that dignytie, wherunto he asspyryd by all meanes possible, and that yerfor he had at the last stirryd upp warr agaynst kinge Rycherd: but let us returne to owr purpose.

Now before the duke all in a rage had begun to be alyenate in mynde from king Richerd, the same very time a plot of new conspiracy was layd at London betwixt Elyzabeth the quene, wyfe to king Edward, and Margaret mother to erle Henry, in this sort: This Margaret for want of health usid thadvysse of a physition namyd Lewys, a Welshman born, who, because he was a grave man and of no smaule experiance, she was wont oftentimes to conferre frely with all, and with him famlyarly to lament her adversitie. And she, being a wyse woman, after the slaughter of king Edwardes children was knownen, began to hope well of hir soones fortune, supposing that that dede wold withoutw dowt proove for the profyt of the commonwelth, yf yt might chaunce the bloode of king Henry the Sixth and of king Edward to be intermenglyd by affynytie, and so two most pernicious factions should be at once, by conjoynyng of both the howses, utterly taken away. Wherfor furthwith not neglecting so great oportunitie, as they wer consulting togythers, she utteryd to Lewys that

Renold
Bray, the
countys of
Richmonds
servant,
sent for to
the duke
of Buck-
ingham.

Lewis a
physetyon
used be-
tweene Q.
Elizabeth
and the
countys of
Richmond
for a match
to be had
betweene
their
children.

the time was now coom when as king Edwardes eldest dowghter might be geaven in maryage to hir soon Henry, and that king Rycherd, accountyd of all men enemy to his countree, might easly be dejectyd from all honor and bereft the realme, and therfor prayd him to deale secretly with the quene of suche affayre; for the quene also usyd his head, because he was a very learnyd physytion. Lewys nothing lyngeryng spak with the quene, as yeat remaning in sayntuarie, and declaryd the matter not as delyveryd to him in charge but as devysyd of his owne heade. The quene was so well pleasyd with this devyse, that she commandyd Lewys to repare to the countes Margaret, who remaynyd in hir husbands howse at London, and to promyse in hir name that she wold do hir indevor to procure all hir husband king Edwards frynds to take part with Henry hyr soon, so that he might bee sworne to take in maryage Elyzabeth hyr dowghter, after he shalle have gotten the realme, or els Cycly, the yownger, yf thother showlde dye before he enjoyed the same. Lewys, by and by, doing as he was commandyd, made up the matter easly betwyxt the two women, who because of his scyence becam a messenger betwene them, and was assocyat unto them in this new conspyracy against king Richerd withoutt any suspytion. Thus Margaret being browght in good hope apoyntyd Raynold Bray her servyteur, a man most faythfull and trustie, to be the chief dealer in this conspyracy, and commanded him to draw unto her partie, as secretly as might be, soom such noble or woorshipfull men as wer wyse, faythfull, and actyve, who wer hable to make help in the cause. Raynold within few days gathered into the socytic of that conspyracy Gyles Dawbney knight, Richerd Gylfoord, Thomas Ramney, John Cheney, and many mo, having taken an oathe beforehand of every man perticulerly. The quene also maketh hir frindes partakers of this devyse and busynes to be set forward with all sped conveinent. But Margaret the meane whyle tooke into hir famly

Rainold
Braye pro-
cures a
confedera-
tion of the
contesse of
Rich-
monds
party.

Christopher Urswyche, an honest, approovyd, and serviceable priest, Christofor Urswicke sent into Bryttany to the earle of Riche-mond.
 and after he was sworn unto hir, she discoveryd to him all her intent, trustyng that she might so do safely because Chrystopher was alway a favorer of king Henry the vjth, and commendyd to hir by Lewys the physytion. Thus the mother, carefull for the well doing and glory of hir soon, gave Christopher in charge to go unto erle Henry into Bryttany, and to signyfy unto him all that was doone with the quene. But before he began to take his journey behold she was suddanely advertysid of the same practyse purposyd by the duke of Buckingham, as we have before remembryd; which whan she knew she alteryd hir intent, staying Christopher at home, and sent Hugh Conwey into Bryttane unto hir soon Henry with a good great sum of money, commanding him to utter all thinges, and exhort hys returne, and especyally to advyse him to arryve in Wales, wher he should fynde ayd in readines. Also, Richerd Gilfoord sent after him owt of Kent Thomas Romney with the same message. They having spedys passage cam unto erle Henry almost at one time, whom we have before sayd to have bene with the duke of Bryttany, now after the death of king Edward at his owne lybertie. Henry having receavyd the message gave thanks to God, supposing his whole harts desyre cowld not have happenyd without Gods speciall provydence; and therfor, rejoysing woonderusly, he conferryd all thinges with the duk, shewing that he had conceavyd an assuryd hope of obtainyng the realme of England, and prayd therfor that the same might be browght abowt both by his good help and assent, whiche whan so ever hablytie showld serve he wold not fale to requyte. The duke, althowgh he had bene laboryd from king Richerd both with money and muche sute by Thomas Hutton his ambassador, whom we have before declaryd to have bene sent thyther, that he wold thrust erle Henry agane into ward, yeat he promysyd ayd and willingly gave yt. Than Henry premysyd into England Hewgh

Christofer Urswick journey stayed, and Hugh Conwey sente to the earle of Riche-mond.

Thomas Rumney sent by Richard Gylford to earle Richmond.

Conway and Thomas Ramsey to geve notice of his coomming, that his frinds might take order hedefully for all other things which by pollycy might be provydyd for; hys owne pleasure was to stay ther untill that all thinges nedefull for saling wer preparyd. In the meane time in England the heades of the conspyracy went abowt many matters; soome held furnyshyd fyt places with force of men; soome secretly solycytyd the commonaltie to sedytion; others earnestly mynded, and wer redy, so soone as they should know of Henryes arryvall, to begin the warre; others fynally, of which number John Morton bisshop of Ely was chief, provokyd, by secrete messengers, all men to this new conspyracy whom they knew assurydly to hate king Richerd no lesse than themselves did.

While these thinges wer a doing king Richerd was informyd of the conspyracy of these noble men, who being dryven into perplexitie by dubble mischief, for because he nether had army in readynes, nether yeat, yf he showld make warre uppon the suddayn, knew suffycyently wher to encountner thenemy, wher to tary nor whyther to go, determinyd to dyssemble the matter a while till he might gather an army, and that by speache of the people, and dylygence of espyall, the devyses of his adversaryes wer searchyd owt, conceavyd, manyfestyd, and discoveryd, or that by thys kinde of sleyght he might apprehend soome of the conspirators; for that ther is no deceyt more depe and secrete than that which lurketh in the disseniblly of understanding, or under soome colour of curtesy.

The kynge sent for the duke of Bucking-ham, but he refused. And because he knew the duke of Buckingham to be the head of the conspyrators, therfor first of all he thought best, ether by fraude or force, to cut of the same; and therfor he sent exceeding curteous letters unto the duke that he wold coome unto him, and gave the messenger who caryed the letters in charge to make in his name many fayre promyses, and by soome good meane per-swade him to coome unto the court. The duke, alledging infyrmylie of stomake, awnsweryd the messenger that presently coome

he cowld not. King Rycherd wold admyt none excuse, but sent for him agane with threatening woords. Than the duke openly denied that he wold coom to his enemy, and withall made ready for warre, and perswadid his confederates furthwith, soom one wher soom other, to rase the people. So almost at one moment and time Thomas marquye Dorset, who was gone owt of sayntuary and preservyd from all danger by meane of Thomas Rowell, in Yorkshire, Edward Courtney, with Peter his broother, bisshop of Exeester, in Devonshire, Richerd Gylfoord, with certane of great reputation, in Kent, rasyd upp the commons every wher to armor, and made a begynning of warres. But king Richerd the R. 3 gone
meane season having gatherid an huge host of arnyd men, because with an army
he wold not dissypate his forces, the while he was willing to pur- against the
sew every of the conspyrators, resolvyd to omyt the resydew, and duke of
turne his whole army agaynst the head, that was the duke, who Buck-
removing from London tooke his journey towardes Salsbury, to ham.
thintent he might dyvert owt of that way agaynst the duke wher-
soever he could learne that he wer encampyd. And now was he
coommvd within two days journey of the towne, whan the duke
with great force of Walse soldiers, whom he, as a sore and hard
dealing man, had brought to the feild agaynst ther wills, and
withoutt any lust to fight for him, rather by rigorus commandment
than for money, which was the cause of the revolt, went carnestly
abowt to encountner the king, but he was forsaken suddaynly of The duke
the more part of his soldiers, and compellyd thereby to fly, during of Buck-
which flight, being in great terror by reason of this suddane ingham
chaunge of fortune, whan he knew not well what way to take, he
got himself into the howse of a certane servant of his namyd
Humfrey Banyster, whom because he had found an honest man
eaven from his chyldehoode, therfor he trustyd to fynde him most
faythfull, and commytyd himself to hys fydelytie, meaning to
remane secret with him untill the tyme that he might advyse
forsaken of his sol-
diers.

ether how to repare for his owne defence a new army, either els to go unto therle Henry into Brytayn. But whan his confederates, who had now begoon warre, knew that the duke was forsaken of his people, and fled no man wyst whyther, they wer suddainly dismayd, every man fled without hope of saftie, and other got into sayntuaryes or wyldernes, or assayed to sayle over the seas, wherof a great part came safe soone after into Brytayne. Emongest that company was Peter Cortney bisshop of Exeester, with Edward his broother, erle of Devonshire, Thomas marquise Dorcest, with Thomas his soon, a very chylde, John Bursher, John Welles, Edward Woodvill, a valyant man of warre, brother to quene Elizabeth, Robert Wylloughbie, Gyles Dabene, Thomas Arundell, John Cheyney, with hys two brothers, William Barchley, William Brandon, with Thomas his broother, Rycherd Edgecombe, and all these almost of thorder of knighthoode: also John Halvell, Edward Peningham, chiefe captane of tharmy, Christopher Urswyche, and John Morton bysshop of Ely, with many other noble men, transportyd over abowt the same very time into Flanders.

But king Richerd, a man muche to be feared for circumspection and celerytie, who now was coomyd to Salsbury, after that he knew the duke and others of the conspyraey to be fled, determinyd to pursew them, and first sent soldyers anon to all the portes nigher therabowts, to take, kepe, and hold all passinge owt by sea, and to let them that fled from transporting; than after, to any man that showld tell of the duke he proclamyd large reward; to the bond, libertie; to the fre pardon from punishment and a mli. And because he had receavyd of late intellygence by Thomas Hutton, being returnyd owt of Brytayne, that the duke thereof was so farre from condiscending to kepe erle Henry in pryson for his sake, yea as that he was busyl abowtward to ayd therle with succor and supply against him, he disposed withall certane shipps well furnysshdyd alongest the sea coste that

The duke
of Buck-
inghames
confede-
rates flee
into Brit-
tany.

A procla-
macone
against the
duke of
Buck-
ingham.

tendeth toward Brytayne, to thintent that, yf erle Henry showld by chaunce coom, he might ether be interceptyd or kept from the shore. Moreover, to make marvalus strayt watche every wher, he disposyd some soldiers in places convenient to beset ways, paths, and all kynd of passages: he sent owt others every way, to seke yf yt were possyble to fynde and apprehend any wher the duke or any his confederats. To these men seking owt all things narrowly, Humfrey Bannister, whether for feare or money *yt is* soom dowt, betrayed his guest Henry the duke, who brought him furthwith to Salsbury unto king Richerd. The duke was dily- gently examynyd, and what he knew upon demand he tould without torture, hopynge because he freely confessyd, that therfor he showld have lybertie to speake with king Richerd, which he most sore desyryd; but after he had confessyd thoffence he was beheadyd. This death dyd the duke suffer of king Richerd, whom he had aydyd agaynst his own conscience (as the saing is), with *ultra aras.* whom he had by this meane conjoignyd socyetic of perill more trewly than of empire. Hereof surely may we marke, that he loseth his labor, and chargeth his owne lyfe with haynous offence, who helpeth an evell and wicked man, seing that he both re- ceaveth of him for the most part an evell dede for a good, and of God alway in the ende condigne punishment.

Whyle these thinges were doone in England, Henry erle of Richemoond had preparyd an army of v.M. Bryttaynes, and fur- nyshyd a navy of xvth. shipps, and now was approchyd the day of his departure, who began to sayle with prosperous wynd the vjth. ides of October in the yere of helth M.cccc.lxxxijj., and the second king Richerd began his raigne. But a little before even suddayn tempest arose, wherwithall he was so afflyetyd that his shipps wer constraygnyd by force of a crewell gale of wynde to turne ther course from one way from another; divers of them wer blowne bak into Normandie, others into Brytany. The ship wherin

The duke
of Buck-
ingham
betrayed
by Ilomfrey
Banystere
his ser-
vant.

The earle
of Riche-
mond
taketh his
journey
towards
England.

Henry was, with one other, tossyd all the night long with the waves, cam at the last very early in the morning, whan the winde grew calme, uppon the south coast of the island, agaynst the haven caulyd Pole. From hence erle Henry, viewing afur of all the shore beset with soldiers, whiche king Richerd, as we have before shewyd, had every wher disposyd, gave open commandment that not one man of them all showld take landing before the resydew of the ships showld come togythers ; which, while he taryeth for, he sent owt a bote to try whether they wer his frindes which hoovyd so in the same place. Than those who wer sent wer earnestly desyryd by the soldiers from the shore to come a land, cryng that they wer sent from the duke of Buckingham to be ready for the accompanyng of erle Henry safe unto the camp, which the duke himself had at hand with a notable excellent army, so that joigning ther forces they both might pursew king Richard who was fled. But erle Henry suspecting yt to be a trayn, as yt was in dede, after that he dyd see none of his owne ships within view, hoysyd upp sale, and with prosperus wynde came into Normandy, so that a man may think the very blast of the wynde drove him bak from danger. Here he, taryng upon the shore the space of thre days for the refreshing of his soldiers after ther toyle and travaille, determynyd to returne with part of his retynew a foote into Brytayne, and in the meane time sent ambassadors to demand of Charles theight, king of Fraunce, who had succeeded Lewis his father lately dead, leave to passe throwghe Normandy. The king ptying therles fortune, dyd not onely grant him passage with good will, but also money to beare his charges. Howbeyt himself, trusting upon the kinges courtesy, had sent his ships home before and was enteryd on his journey ; yeat he had not gone fur whan thambassadors returnyd, so that greatly comfortyd by that benyfyt and replenished with good hope he returnyd into Brytayne, supposing that from thencefurth he must take an other

The earle
of Rich-
monds
shipes
being
scatered
durst not
land.

course. But being in Brytayne he had intelligence by his frindes that the duke of Buckingham was beheadyd in England ; that the marquise Dorset, with a well great number of thinglishe noblytie, was commyd thither a little before to seke him, and remanyd at Vanes ; which newys whan he understande to be trew, he muche lamentid that the first attempt of those noble personages had fallen so evell owt, yet on thother syd rejoysing that he had so many notable captanes partakers of that warre, and withall coneeaving eaven than almost an assuryd opynion that all his assayres wer firmly strengthenyd, and that his cause wold coome well to passe, he adjudgyd yt mete for him to use celerytie. Wherfor, going unto Reynes, he sent furthwith certane of his retynew to bring *Rhedones.* The marquise Dorset aryed in Brittany.

much as that which he had already receavyd of his frindes was spent in furnishing of the former warre, and promysyd that he wold faythfully repay what soo ever he should receave, and in time to coome plentyfully requyte the dukes singular lyberalytie with all indevor, care, and diligence. The duke promysyd him ayde, whereupon trusting he took uppon him agane the eare of preparing a navy, and made himself ready to the sea, that he should not be hinderyd from any attempt by laches of time.

In the meane whyle king Richerd, being returnyd to London, commandyd certane that wer guyltie of the conspyracy who wer taken in sundrye places all at once, and emong them George

Diverses of the earle of Richemonds confede-rates put to deathe. A parlia-ment cauled and suche as wente over to the earle of Richmond weare attaynted.

Broune, Roger Clyfford, Thomas Selenger, knightes, also Thomas Ramney, Robert Clyfford, and dyvers others, yea of his owne howschold, to be put to death. Afterward he assemblyd a parlyament, wherin he proeuryd all thexyles to be denoneyd traytors to ther countree by act of parlyament; then all ther goodes to be confiyscate, and not content with that pray, though very riche, he fynally causyd a great tax of money to be imposyd uppon the people, for he had bene of late so lavashing in rewards, seking by suche meane to purge himself, and win favor of the commonaltie, that he began now to be nedye. But yt went very hard that Thomas Stanley also was not accowntyd emongest the number of the kinges enemyes, by reason of the practyses of Margaret his wyfe, mother unto erle Henry, who was commonly caulyd the head of that conspyracy; but, for as muche as the woorking of a

The coun-
ties of
Riche-
monds
servantes
removed
from her.

womans wit was thowght of smaule accounte, the cownsell therfor set downe and commandyd that Thomas, who proovid himself guiltles of the offensee, should remove from his wyfe all hir servantes, and kepe hir so strayt with himself that she should not be hable from thencefurth to send any messenger nether to hir soone, nor frinds, nor practise any thing at all agaynst the king; which was doone accordingly. Also by authorytie of the same

parlyament a peace was made with the Scottes, who a lyttle ^{A peace with Scot-}
before had run forrows about the borders. Whan these thinges ^{land.} wer thus concludyd, all the conspyracy semyd in a maner extin-
guyshyd; the duke beinge taken away and other his confederates
partly executyd, partly exylyd into foreyn countreys. But king
Richerd, as yeat more dowtyng than trusting in his owne cause,
was vexyd, wrestyd, and tormentyd in mynd with feare almost
perpetually of therle Henry and his confederates returne; wherfor
he had a myserable lyfe, who to ryd himself of this inward gryefe,
determinyd fynally to pull up by the rootes all matter of feare
and tumult, and other by guyle or force to bring the same abowt.
And so after suche resolution taken he thought no way more fytt
or commendable than to solycit agane the duke of Brytayne, for
money, prayer, and reward, because yt lay in his hand to dispatche
him quyte of all perill, and therfore he sent furthwith speyall mes-
sengers to the duke, who, besydes great gyttes which they caryed R. 3 sent a
with them, showlde promise to geave him yerely the whole revenues new mes-
of all the lands appertaining to earle Henry, and the resyde of sengere to
thinglishe noblyte that wer with him, yf he wold from thence-
furth kepe them with him in ward. The messengers being gone
with this maner message could not deal this matter with the duke, ^{of Brittany}
^{syngē} ^{great} rewards.
for that he was becoome feble by reason of sore and dayly siknes and
began to maddle; wherfor Peter Landofe his treasurer, a man both
of sharpe wit and great authortie, rewlyd all matters as himself lyst,
who for that cause had stirryd upp greviously agaynst himself thenvy
of the Bryttishe noblytie. This man dyd thīglyshe ambassadors
deale withall, and explaning ther commyssion besowght him car-
nestly that he, who might do all things as hym lyst, wold fulfill
king Richerds dayly desire. Peter, who was in great hatryd of his
owne countrymen, supposing that yf he showlde satisfy king Richerd
he showlde be more mightie againe his adversaryes, awnsweryd
that he wold do the thing which king Richerd requyryd, so that he

wold kepe promyse. And all this dyd he by reason of eyvyll enemytie; for he hated not earle Henry, whom, as we have shewyd in the former booke, he had before delyveryd from danger, at saint Maloes. Thus ever with cause we offend. But the fortune of thinglishe commonwelth was the let why this mortall covenant was not performyd: for whyle that many messengers and often letters dyd fly to and fro betwixt Peter and the king, for dispatche of the busynes, John bysshop of Ely, who lyvyd in Flanders, being certfyfed of that practyse from his fryndes owt of England, gave intelligence to Henry furthwith of the plot that was layd, by Christopher Urswyke, who was coomyd to hym owt of England abowt the same time, and advysyd therle that he showld get himself and thother noble men as soone as might be owt of Brytayne into France. Henry was than at Vanes whan he had intelligence of the fraude, who, without any stay, sent Christopher as ambassador to king Charles, to pray that he myght lawfully passe into France; which thing easily obtanyd, thambassador returnyd spedily unto his prince.

Than earle Henry, thinking yt mete to provyde for his affaires with all dylgence, imparteth his purpose to few of his company, and, having learnyd the way, he sent before all thinglyshe noblytie, faygnyng that he wold send them for supply of his pryvate causes unto the duke, who as than lay for his pleasure not farre from the boundes of Fraunce, and secretly warnyd therle of Pembruch, chief of thambassage, that whan they showld be at the borders of Brytayne, leaving suddaynly the right way, they showld get themselves into Fraunce; who, doing as they wer directyd, procedyd in ther journey contynewally without intermytting any one moment of time, and went unto the country of Angeow. Hynself two days after departing from Vanes, and accompanied with fyve onely servantes, feignyd to go unto a frind, who had a maner not farre of, and, because an huge multitude of English people was

R. 3 practyse with councelere of the duke of Brittanye discouered to the E. of Richmonde.

The earle of Richeymond and his frendes fye into Fraunce.

left in the towne, nobody suspectyd his voyage ; but whan he had journayed almost five myles he withdrew hastily out of the highe way into the next wood, and doing on a serving mans apparell, he as a servant folowyd one of his owne servants (who was his guyde in that journat) as thowghe he had bene his maister, and rode on with so great celerytie, keping yeat no certane way, that he made no stay any where, except yt were to bate his horses, before he had gotten himselfe to his company within the bounds of Angeow. Moreover, fowre days after that erle Henry had escaped by flight, Peters intent was to have set owt certane force of men, musteryd with ther captanes (which he had chosen owt to perform his wicked determynation), under pretence that he wold delyver them to erle Henry, as yt wer to accompany hym in his returne to his country, but in very dede meaning to have browght therle unwares, and suspectyng no guyle, with the resydew of the nobly-lyte, suddenly into pryon ; that by suche haynous fact he might satisfy kinge Rycherd for the trybute which he had promysyd. But this Peter the treasurer, who wantyd no subtilltie, whan he understood that Henry was departyd, wherof his mynde gave him, sent owt horsemen incontinent every way to pursew, and if they cowld overtake him, to apprehend and bring the earle to him. The horsemen made such haste as that ther was never thing more nighe thachieving than thovertakinge of the earle ; hee was scarce ne h owre entryd the boundes of France whan they cam thyther. But thinglishe men (abowt three hundredth in number), who remained at Vanes, whan they knew that erle Henry was fled, because they were not pryvy therunto, became so afraed that they wer now in utter despeare of safety ; howbeit the matter fell owt otherwyse than they demyd fyf for them to feare ; for the duke, takinge yt in evell part that Henry was so uncurteously enter-taynyd as that he was foreyd to fly owt of his domynyon, and for the same cause being very angry with Peter, uppon whom, thowghe

The duke of Brittany send the residue of earl Henryes trayne after him into France upon his charge.

himself was ignorant of all the practyse, he layd the blame of that offence, cawlyd unto him Edward Ponings, and thother Edward Woodvyll, and geaving them money to beare the charges of ther journey, commanded them to conduct all thinglishe men to therle. And so earl Henry, having receavyd all his retynew, was woonderus glad, who, because he wold not be aecountyd unthankfull, sent back dyvars unto the duke tadvertysse on his behalf, that presently hee thankyd him for the saftie of himself and all his company, which thereafter in time he wold not fale to requyte.

Angiers. But hee within few days after reparyd unto king Charles, who was at a towne sytuate uppon the ryver of Loire caulyd Angiers; unto whom, after thankes geaven for the benefytes receavyd, he first explanyd the cause of his cooming, than he besowght ayd wherby, throwgh his immortal benyfyt, he might returne safely unto his owne noblytie, of whom he was generally caulyd unto the kingdom, so muche dyd they abhorre the tyranny of king Richerd.

King Charles of France yelds ayd to earle Henry.

King Charles promysyd him ayd, and bad him be of good chere, for he wold willingly shew his goodwill, who furthwith after departyd to Montarge, taking Henry with him and all the trane of his noblytie. During the time of Henry his abode heare John earle of Oxfoord, whom we have above mentionyd to have bene holden in ward of king Edward in the castle of Hammes, togyther with James Blunt the captane therof, and John Fortescue knight,

The earle of Oxford and otheres came over into France to the earle of Richemond.

the gentleman porter of Calys, subornyd by the erle, cam unto him; but captane James, because hee left his wyfe in the castle, had furnissyd the same with new garryson before his departure thence. Whan Henry saw therle he was ravisshyd with joy ineredible that a man of so great noblytie and knowledge in the warres, and of most perfyte and sownd fydelytie, most earnestly bent to his syde, was at the last by Gods assistance delyveryd owt of ward, and in so fyt tyme coommyd to help him, in whome he might repose his hope, and settle himself more safely than in any other;

for he was not ignorant that others who had holden on king Edward syde yealdid unto him by reason of the evell state of time, but this man who had so oft foughte for king Henry was he thowght delyveryd from that ward by the heavenly help, that he might have one of his owne faction to whom he might safely commyt all thinges; and therfor rejoysing above all measure for therle of Oxfoorthis cooming, he began to hope better of his affaires.

Not long after king Charles removyd to Paris, whom erle Henry folowyd, and sowght there to bring to passe his sute, requesting king Charles agane to take him wholy to his tuytion, so that yf he and his confederates showlde be in safetie they might all lykewyse also acknowledge the same receavyd at his hand. In the meane time very many Englishe men, who ether dyd flok contynewally owt of England, or were ther studyouse of learning, gave and vowyd upp themselves wholy to take his part. Emongest these was Richard Fox, priest, a man of an excellent wyt, a man learnyd, whom Henry receavyd immediatly to be of his privy counsaile, and browght within short whyle to great honor, who is now bisshop of Wynchester.

Richerd in the meane time having intelligence what covenants the confederats in Brytayn had made emongest themselves, and how they had all escapyd into France by the conduct of earle Henry, thowgh he wer greatly disapoyntryd because his craftie practyse had not procedyd, yeast he determinyd to prevent by an other way that thearle Henry showlde not coom unto the kingdom by maryage of hys nece Elyzabeth. And because, in comparyson of thorrible factes which, blyndyd with desyre of soveraigntie, he had before enterprysyd, all other thinges that he showlde do aftirward semyd in his estimation but smaule matters (according as the proverb putteth us in remembrance, He will lyft up an oxe that hath carayed a calfe), ther cam therfor into his mynde matter

Richard
Fox, priest,
after bishop
of Win-
chester,
came to
earl Henry
to France.

the most wickyd to be spoken, and the fowlest to be commytyd, that ever was herd of. For whyle he revolvyd with himself how great heap of myschiefe wer immynent yf Henry should be avaunced by maryage of his nece, uppon thonly rumor wherof he herd of dyvers who semyd already carefull for therles affayres;

R.3 labores
to perswad
Q. Eliz. to
come out of
sanctuary
and delyver
hir daugh-
tere to
him.

he therfor determinyd, by all meanes possyble, to reconcyle unto him Elyzabeth the quene, that she myght yeald hir self and hir dowghters into his handes, and Henry by that meane defraudyd from thaffynitic of his nece; and yf yt wer not possible to salve the sores immynent otherwyse, and that by hap it myght fortune his wyfe too dye, than he wold rather mary his nece himself than by thaffynytic aforesayd to danger the state, as thowgh by his faule the ruyne of the realme must nede folow. And so he sent into the saintwary often messengers unto the quene to make unto hir purgation of his fact, and by promysing mountaynes both unto hir and hir soon Thomas the marquise to put the woman in passing great hope. The messengers being grave men, though at the first by redueyng to memory the slawghter of hir soonnes they soomwhat wowndyd the quenes mynde, and that hir gryefe semyd searse hable to be comfortid, yeat they assayed hir by so many meanes, and so many fayre promises, that withoutt muche adoe they began to mollyfy hir (for so mutable is that sex), in so muche that the woman herd them willingly, and fynally sayd she wold yeald hir selfe unto the king; and so not very long after, forgetting injuryes, forgetting hir faith and promyse geaven to Margaret,

R. 3 prac-
tysed the
deathe of
his queene.

Henryes mother, she first delyvered hir dowghters into the handes of king Richerd; than aftir by secret messengers advysyd the marquise her soon, who was at Parys, to forsake erle Henry, and with all speede convenient to returne into England, wher he should be sure to be caulyd of the king unto highe promotion. Whan the quene was thus qualfyfed, king Richerd receavyd all his brothers dawghters owt of saintuary into the court. Thonely

matter now remaning was to acquyte himself of marriage, which he adjudgyd best for him to do by all meane possible; but this savage and crewell mynde of his was no lytle fearyd from so great and owrageous fact, for that (as we have before mentyonyd) he had of late counterfaytyd to be a good man, and therfor was afeard least by the untymely death of his wyfe he showld hinder the good opynyon which he beleavyd the people had conceavyd uppon him. But the wickyd intent wan the mastery in the wyt wayward from all righteousnes; for first he forbare to lye with her, and withall began to complane muche unto many noble men of his wifes unfruytfulnes, for that she brought him furth no children, and that chiefly dyd he lament with Thomas Rotheram archebysshop of York, because he was a grave and good man, whom he had a lyttle before let owt of prison (who thereuppon gatheryd and supposyd yt wold come to passe that the quene should not long lyve, and foreshewyd the same to dyvers his frinds). Than after he procuryd a rumor (uncertane from whom) to be spred abrode of the quene his wifes death, that ether the woman being browght in great dolor, by report and fame of the matter, might faule into siknes, ether els that he might therby take a proofe yf the same showld happen afterward whether the people wold lay the blame therof unto his charge. But whan the quene herd of suche terrible rumors dispersyd already of hir owne death, supposing that hir days wer at an end, she went unto her husband very pensyffe and sadde, and with many teares demandyd of him what cause ther was why he should determyne hyr death. Hereunto the king, least that he might seme hard hartyd yf he showld shew unto his wyfe no signe of loove, kissing hir, made awnswer loovingly, and comfortyng hir, bad hir be of good chere. But the quene, whether she wer dispatchyd with sorowfulness, or poysone, dyed within few days after, and was buryed at Westmynster. This ys Anne that thone of the daughters of Richerd erle of Warweke who was soom

R. 3 his
queen died
sodenly.

tyme covenantyd to prince Edward, soon to king Henry the Sixt. The king thus lowsyd from the bond of matrimony, began to cast an eye uppon Elyzabeth his neee, and to desyre hir in maryage ; but because both the yowng lady hirself, and all others, did abhorre the wickednes so detestable, he determinynd therfor to do every thing by leysure, for so muche especially as he was overwhelmyd with pinching cares on every hand ; for that soom man of name passyd over dayly unto Henry, others favoryd secretly the partners of the conspyracy. Emongest these principally was Thomas Stanley, William his brother, Gylbert Talbot, and others innumerable, whose inward mynde thowgh Richerd was ignorant of, yeat he trustyd never one of them all, and Thomas Stanley least of all others, because he had in maryage Henryes mother, as the matter yt self made manyfest shew ; for whan he at that time wold have gone into his countrie, for his pleasure as he sayd, but indede that he might be ready to receave erle Henry as a frind at his cooming, the king forbad him, and wold not suffer him to depart before he had left George lord Strange his soone as a pledge in the court.

The lo.
Stanley
and others
of the con-
spiracye of
the E. of
Richmond.

R. 3 had
notice that
the castell
of Haines
held with
the E. of
Richmond

Whyle king Richerd was thus occupied in so great trouble of mynde and alteration of devyses for feare of stirre to coome, beholde he heard that the same was broken owt, for hee had intelligence that the castle of Hammes held with Henry by meane of therle of Oxfoorth, and that he, with James Blunt, captane therof, were fled to Henry himself ; wherefore thinkinge yt best to withstand the begynning, he sent furthwith to recover the hold, a good part of the garryson which was at Calys. Those who wer within the castle, whan they saw thadversary approche, armyd themselves quikly to the defense, and anon sent messengers to erle Henry to demand ayd. Henry without delay commandyd therle of Oxfoorth with choyse soldiers to go and help his frinds, who in ther first arryvall encampyd themselves not farre from the

castle; the whyle they held ther enemys intentyve upon that part, Thomas Brandon, with thirtie valyant man, entryd the castle Hames by the marishe, which joingneth unto the place. Than they castle dely-
vered by
who wer within, having receavyd new supply, skrymysshed with the earle of thennemy from the waule more sharply than before. Therle of Riche-
monds
Oxfoorth also at ther bakes was no lesse earnest; wherby yt fell people.
owt that thenemyes of ther owne free will gave unto the besegyd
fre lybertie to depart with bagg and baggage, which condytion
therle of Oxfoorth, who came for that ende to delyver his frindes
from danger, and especyally the wyfe of James, the captane therof,
dyd not refuse, but leaving the castle returnyd safe with his com-
pany to Parys. King Richerd after this understoode by his
spyalls that Henry, hinderyd emongest the Frenche by reason of
the time, grew weary with contynuall demaunding of ayd, that he
profytyd nothing, nor that any thing went forward with him, but
that all thinges which he dilygently had devysyd fell owt not well;
which whan he beleyyd to be so, as thowgh he had vanquisshed
the whole warres, and had bene delyveryd from all feare, supposyd
that ther was no cause why he shoulde take such care in a matter
of no danger, caulyd his shippes from ther stations, and all the
soldiers which he had before placyd heare and there to kepe of
thenemy; but least he might be found altogether unready, he
commandyd noble men and gentlemen dwellynge about the sea
coste, and chiefly the Walshe men, to kepe watche by course after
ther country maner, to thintent that his adversaryes shoulde not
have ready recovery of the shore and coome a land; for thinha-
bytantes about the sea costes place, in the time of warre especyally, Beakones
on the hylls adjoyning lampes fastenyd upon frames of timber, prepared in
and whan any great or notable matter happeneth, by reason of Wales and
all places.
thaproche of enemyes, they suddanely lyght the lampes, and
with showtes through towne and fielde geave notice therof; from
thence others aftirward receave and utter unto ther neighbors

notice after the same sort. Thus ys the fame therof caryed spedly to all villages and townes, and both country and towne arme themselves agaynst thenemy. And thus king Richerd, soomwhat easyd of his griefe, began to be more careles, least otherwise he might by dylygence have avoydyd the desteny that hang over his head; for suche is the force of the divine justice, that a man lesse seath, lesse provydeth, and lesse hede taketh when he ys nigher the yealding of punishment for his haynous offences.

At that time that Henry stayd in France for thobtaning of ayde very many noble men were, by reason of king Charles his age, rewlers of the realme, not muche agreeing emong themselves, of which pryvy hatryd Lewys duke of Orleance was head, who, seing he had in maryage Joan syster to king Charles, strove to beare chief sway in the government of the commonwelth; by which oceasyon yt cam to passe that the charge of thempire was commytyd to no one man; and erle Henry, who day and night omytyd no oportunytic of hastening his voyage into his country, was compellyd to go and make earnest sute unto every man particularly.

Thomas marques Dorset fleags towards England from the E. of Richmound.

So was the matter driven of, when Thomas marquise Dorest, whom we have before sayd to have bene cauled home of his mother, partly despearing for that cause of erle Henryes successe, partly subornyd by king Richerds fayre promyses, departyd pryvyly in the night time from Parys, and with great journeys travalyd into Flanders; which thing as soone as therle and thother Englishe noblytie understande they were muche moovyd, and desyryd of king Charles that they might by his commandment stay the man who was pryvy to all ther purposes whersoever he should be fownd, and ther sute obteynyd began to ryde owt every way.

The marques Dorset came back agayne by the perswasyon of Homfrey Cheyney.

But Humfrey Cheyney, savoring most subtilly the trace of him that went before, followyd the right way, and overtooke the marquise at the towne of Compiegne, and so perswadyd him that a little after he returnyd to his felowes. Erle Henry, easyd of that

griefe, determinyd that yt was not for him to linger, but to use all the celerytie that might be, least by dowting and differring of time he should losse great oportunitie, or least longer looking for might trooble more the myndes of his frinds who awaytyd for his coomming. And so, obtaynyng of king Charles a scelender supply, and borowyng as well of him as of other pryvate frinds certane money, for the which he left sureties, or rather pledges, the marquise and John Burschere, he departyd to Roan. While he taryed here, and riggyd his navy at the mouth of Seyne, a rumor came unto his eare that king Richerd, his wife being dead, was amyndyd to mary Elizabeth, his brother Edwardes dowghter, and that he had maryed Cecyly, Edwards other doughter, unto an obscure man of no reputation. This matter being of no smaule weyght, as the which cut away from the confederates all hope of executyng ther delyberat resolution, pinchid Henry by the veray stomak, because therby he saw that he cowld not now expect the marriage of any of king Edwardes dowghters, wherfor he thowght yt was to be fearyd least his frindes should forsake him. The matter therfor being browght to consultation of a few, yt lyked them to prefer the same, before the profection, that they might assay if any other cowld be adjoignyd, and yt was thowght to stand with ther profyt yf by affynytie they cowld draw into suryetie of that warre Gwalter Harbert, a man of ancyent authortie emong the Welshe men, who had with him a sister marrageable; and to procure the same messengers were sent to Henry earl of Northumberland, who had in marriage Gualters other sister, that he wold deale in that cause; but the ways were so beset that none of them could coome unto him. But a better messenger came from John Morgan, a lawyer, who signfyed the same tyme that Richerd, by surname Thomas, a man of great service and valyant, and John Savage, wer wholy geauen to erle Henryes affayres, and that Reynold Bray had made up no smaule summ of

Pledges left
with the
king of
France for
moneye
lente E.
Henry.

The E. of
Richmonde
sent mes-
sengers to
Gualter
Harberte
to have his
ayde, and
to marye
his sister.
A messen-
ger frō
Jo. Mor-
gent to ad-
monishe E.
of Rich-
mond to
haste into
England.

money to pay soldyers wages withall, and therfor advysyd him that as soone as oportunytie shoulde serve he wold take the streight way into Wales.

E. of
Richmond
arrivethe
at Milford
Haven.

Dalla.

Hare-
forde.

Arnold
Butler
came to the
E. of Rich-
mond with
his forces.

Than Henry, thinkinge yt nedefull to make haste, that his frinds shoulde not be any longer kept in perplexytie betwene hope and drede, uncertane what to do, after he had made his prayers to God that he might have an happy and prosperous journey, he lowsyd from the mowth of Seyne with two thousand onely of armyd men and a few shippes, the calends of August, and with a soft suthren wynde. The weather being very fayre he came unto Wales the 7th day after, a lyttle before soone set, wher, entring thaven caulyd Milford, and furthwith going a land, he took first a place the name wherof ys Dalley, wher he herd that certane compagnyes of his adversaryes had had ther stations the wynter by past to have kept him from landing. From thence departing in the breake of day he went to Haverforde, which ys a towne not x^{ne}. myles from Dalley, wher he was receavyd with great goodwill of all men, and the same he dyd with suche celerytie as that he was present and spoken of all at once. Heare he understandeth that Rycherd Thomas and John Savage, with all ther force and frindes, dyd help king Richerd to thuttermost of ther power, clene contrary to that he was certyfyed of in Normandy. But thinhabitants of Pembrough at the same very time comfortyd all ther dysmayed myndes, for they gave intelligence, by Arnold Butler, a valyant man, demanding forgeavenes of ther former offences, that they wer ready to serve Jaspar ther erle. Henry, his army thus augmentyd, departyd from Hareford, and goeth forward v. myles toward Cardygan. The whyle the soldyers refreshyd themselves hear a rumor was suddaynly spred throughe the whole camp, thautor wherof was uncertane, that Gwalter Herbert and those who wer in camp at the towne of Carmardyne wer at hand with an huge army. Wherupon a stirre rose streightway, every man

mayd ready his armor, assayd his weapon, and began to advance the same, and all men wer in feare therwith a lyttle whyle, whan as thorsemen sent owt before hand to scurrey by erle Henry brought home woord that all thynges (as they wer in dede) wer quiet, and that ther was no hinderance to ther voyage immynent ; but one Gryfyne, a man of highe parentage, did above the rest make them all mery, who, thowgh before he had joingnyd with Gualter Harbert and Rycherd, yeat almost at the very same instant revoltyd with his company of soldiers, few though they wer, to erle Henry. The same very day also John Morgan came to the sayd Henry. Thus Henry went forward without stay almost in any place, and that he might have more ready passage he set upon dyvers fortresses furnyshyd with garryson of his adversaryes, and the same wan without any difficultie ; and whan as after these thinges he understoode by the scownts that Harbert and Rycherd wer before him in armes, he resolvyd to go agaynst them, and whan he had ether put them to flight or receavyd them into his obedience to make haste against king Richerd. But that he might advertise his frinds of his proceedinges, he sent unto Margaret his mother, to the Stanleys, to the lord Talbot, and others, certane of his most faythfull servants with secrete messages, the effect wherof was that he, trusting to the ayde of his frynds, had determinyd to passe over Severn, and throwgh Shropshire to go to London, and therfor desyryd them to mete him, with whom in place and time convenient he wold impart more of his intent. Thus having dispatchyd the messengers with this message, himself procedyd forward toward Shrewsbury, whom Richerd Thomas met by the way with a great bande of soldiers, and with assuryd promysse of loyaltie yealdyd himself to his protection. Two days before Henry had promysyd to Richerd Thomas the perpetuall lyvetenantship of Wales, so that he wold coome under his obedience, which afterward when he had obtanyd the kingdom he gave lyberally. In the meane time the

One Grif-
fyne
broughte
his forces
to the E. of
Richmond.

Jo. Mor-
gane
broughte
his foarces
to E.
Henry.

The E. of
Riche-
mond sent
to the
Standleys
and his
mothere to
advertis
them of his
coming.

Ric.
Thomas
joynes his
pour with
the E. of
Riche-
mond.

Ric.
Thomas
promysed
the leaft-
nancye of
Wales.

messengers having executyd ther charge with dylygence, and loden
 with money which they had receavyd of every man to whom they
 wer sent, returnyd unto Henry the same very day that he came to
 Shrewsbury, and signfyed that his frinds wold be ready to do
 ther dewties in time convenyent. Herewithall Henry beinge
 browght in good hope, contynewyd furth the journey he had
 begun and cam to a village which thinhabytants caule Newport,
 and, pightching his tentes uppon the next hill, taryed ther all the
 night. Ther came unto him in the evening Gilbert Talbot, with
 v.c. and moe armyd men. After that he marchyd on to Staffoord,
 unto whom, the while of his abode ther, came William Stanley,
 with a smaule retynew, who, having short talk with him, returnyd
 to his soldiers, whom he gathered togythers. From thence de-
 parting he went to Lychefelde, and that night taryed without the
 waul. The next day after, very early in the morning, he enteryd
 the towne, and was honorably receavyd. The third day before,
 Thomas Stanley had bene at the same place, gardyd with few lesse
 than fyve thowsand men well armyd, who, understandinge of
 Henryes approche, went before, without delay, to a village caulyd
 Aderstone, meaning ther to tary till Henry showld draw nere.
 This he dyd to avoyd suspition, fearing yf before they showld
 coome to hand strokes he showld overtly shew hiinselv to stand
 and hold with erle Henry, least that king Richerd, who as yeat
 did not utterly mistrust his loyaltie, might kill his soone George,
 whom, as we have before sayd, he held in custody as a pledge.

But Richerd in the meane time, being then at Nottingham, was
 certfyfed that Henry and thother exiles who tooke his part wer
 coommyd into Wales, and that he was utterly unfurnyshyd and
 feble in all thinges, contrary wyse that his men whom he had dis-
 posyd for defense of that province wer ready in all respectes.
 That rumor so puffyd him upp in mynde that first he estemyd
 the matter not muche to be regardyd, supposing that Henry,

Gylbert
 Talbot
 comes to
 ye E. of
 Riche-
 mond.

W^m Stan-
 ley came to
 ye E. of
 Riche-
 mond.

Thomas
 lord Stan-
 ley came to
 the E. of
 Riche-
 mond.

having procedyd rashly, consydering his smaule company, should surely have an evell ende whan he showld coome to that place, wher ether he should be foreyd to fyght against his will, or taken alyve by Gualter Harbert and Richard Thomas, who rewlyd in Wales with equal authoritie. But afterward, waynge with him self that a smaule matter in the warres made soome time great stirre, and that yt was a poynt of wysdom not to contemne the forces of hys enemye, thoughe they wer but smaule, he thowght best to provyde in time for the event to coom ; and therfor he commandyd Henry erle of Northumberland, and other noble men that wer his frinds, who he hoped wold prefer his safety before all that ever they had, to make furthwyth muster of soldiers, and with ther forces furnysshdyd to repare spedely to him. Also by often mes-
 sengers and letters he commandyd Robert Brakenbury, lyveten-
 nant of the towr of London, to coome to him in all haste, and
 to bring with him, as felows in warr, Thomas Burshere, Gwalter
 Hungerfurd, and many other gentlemen of thorder of knighthoode,
 whom he had in suspicion. While these thinges wer a doing, yt
 was reportyd that Henry, without any annoyance receavyd, was
 coomyd unto Shrewsbury ; with which message the king, much
 movyd, began with grief to be in a fervent rage, and cry vehe-
 mently out upon the falsehood of them who had broken promyse,
 and withall to have less confydence in others, in so muche that
 the very first day that oportunitie wold permty he determinyd
 to go agaynst his enemyes, and suddanely sent furth scurryers to
 view what way they held. The scurryers, doing ther devoyer dili-
 gently, returned not long after and advertysyd that Henry was
 encampyd at Lichefelde : which whan he knew, because an huge
 number of men in armes wer now assemblyd, his soldyers beinge
 brought furth into good aray, he commandyd the armye to marche
 forward in square battayll that way by the which they under-
 stoode ther enemies wold coome, and, all impedimentes being

R. 3 sent
to Robert
Braken-
bury the
lieutenant
of the
towre,
command-
ing him to
bring with
him some
of his pri-
soners.

gatheryd into the middest of tharmy, himself, with his gard, dyd folow the wings of horsemen ranging on both sydes; so, keping ther aray, they came unto Leycester a little before the soone sett, whan as the meane while Henry, removing from Lichefelde, travalyd to go unto the next village, which is cauld Tamworth, whom Gualter Hungerford, Thomas Burscher, and many other met by the way, who yealdyd themselves to his obeyssance; for they, perceavyng that king Richerd had them in jelosy, because they wold not be brought to ther enemy agaynst ther willes, forsaking Robert Brakenbury a lyttle beyond Stony Stratford, went away to therle Henry in the night season. Ther flockyd to him also many other noble men of warre, who from day to day hatyd king Richerd woorse than all men lyving.

Ther happenyd in this voyage unto erle Henry a chance worthy memory; for though he wer of noble corage, and that his forces augmentyd every wher, yet was he in great feare, because he thought that he cowld not assure himself of Thomas Stanley, who, as I have shewyd, for that he fearyd the danger that king Richerd might doo his soon, dyd enclyne as yeat to nether partie; and as touching king Richardes causes, yt was told him muche otherwyse than his frinds had signyfyed, which was, that nothing was more firme, nothing better furnysshdyd: wherfor, consydering his feare was not for nothing, himself, accompanied with xx^{tie} armed men onely, stayed by the way, uncertane what was best as to delyberat what he might do. Moreover he herd that king Richerd, with an host innumerable, was at hand. While he thus, soomwhat sadd, folowyd alofe, all tharmy cam to Tamworth, and whan as by reason of the night which came uppon him he could not discerne the trace of them that wer gone before, and so after long wandering could not finde his company, he cam unto a certane towne more than thre myles from his camp, full of feare; who, least he might be betrayed, durst not aske questyons of any man; but taryed ther

Walter
Hunger-
ford and
Tho. Bour-
chere came
to the E.
of Rich-
mond.

all that night, no more afrayed for the present than for the perill to coom; for he was afeard that the same might be a signe of soom maner plague to ensew. Nether was the army lesse heavy for the suddane absence of ther captane, whan as Henry the next day after, in the gray of the morning, returnyd to the hoste, excusing himselfe that he was not deceavyd in the way, but had withdrawen from the camp of set purpose to receave soome goode newys of certane his secret frindes. After that he went prvyly to Adderstone, wher Thomas Stanley and William lay encampyd.

Here Henry dyd mete with Thomas and William, wher taking one another by thand, and yealding mutuall salutation, eche man was glad for the good state of thothers, and all ther myndes wer movyd to great joy. After that, they enteryd in cownsaylle in what sort to darraigne battayll with king Rycherd, yf the matter shoulde coome to strokes, whom they herd to be not farre of. A lyttle before theevening of the same day, John Savage, Bryan Sanfoord, Symon Digby, and many others, revolting from king Richard, came to Henry with a choyse bande of armyd men, which matter both augmentyd the forces of erle Henry, and greatly replenyshyd him with good hope.

In the meane time king Richard, hearing that thennemy drew neare, came first to the place of fight, a little beyond Leycester (the name of that village ys Boswoorth), and ther, pightching his tentes, refreshhyd his soldiers that night from ther travale, and with many woords exhortyd them to the fyght to coome. Yt ys reportyd that king Rycherd had that night a terryble dreme; for he thought in his slepe that he saw horrable ymages as yt wer of evell spyrtytes haunting evydently abowt him, as yt wer before his eyes, and that they wold not let him rest; which visyon trewly dyd not so muche stryke into his brest a suddane feare, as replenyshe the same with heavy cares: for furthwith after, being troublyd in mynde, his hart gave him theruppon that theevent of

The earle
of Rich-
mond &
Tho. lord
Stanley
mette.

John Sa-
vage &
others
come to
the E. of
Richmond.

R. 3 his
fatal
drame.

the battale folowing wold be grevous, and he dyd not buckle himself to the conflict with such lyvelyness of corage and countenance as before, which hevynes that yt showld not be sayd he shewyd as appallyd with feare of his enemyes, he reportyd his dreame to many in the morning. But (I beleve) yt was no dreame, but a conseycence guiltie of haynous offences, a conseycence (I say) so muche the more grevous as thoffences wer more great, which, thowght at none other time, yeat in the last day of owr lyfe ys woont to represent to us the memory of our sinnes commytyd, and withall to shew unto us the paynes immynent for the same, that, being uppon good cause penytent at that instant for our evel led lyfe, we may be compellyd to go hence in heavynes of hart. Now I return to my purpose. The next day after king Richerd, furnysshyd throwghly with all maner of thinges, drew his whole hoste owt of ther tentes, and arraith his vanward, stretching yt furth of a woonderfull lenght, so full replenyshyd both with foote men and horsemen that to the beholders afar of yt gave a terror for the multitude, and in the front wer placeyd his archers, lyke a most strong trench and bulwark ; of these archers he made leder John duke of Norfolk. After this long vanward folowyd the king himself, with a choyce force of soldiers. In this meane time Henry, being departyd bak from the conference with his frinds, began to take better hart, and without any tary encampyd himself nighe his enemyes, wher he restyd all night, and well early in the morning commandyd the soldiers to arm themselves, sending withall to Thomas Stanley, who was now approchyd the place of fight, as in the mydde way betwixt the two battaylles, that he wold coom to with his forces, to sett the soldiers in aray. He awnsweryd that the earle showld set his owne folkes in order, whyle that he should coome to him with his army well apoyntyd. With which answer, geaven contrary to that was looked for, and to that which thoportunytie of time and weight of cause requyrd,

thowghe Henry wer no lyttle vexyd, and began to be soomwhat appallyd, yett withoutt lingering he of necessytie orderyd his men in this sort. He made a slender vanward for the smaule number of his people; before the same he placyd archers, of whom he made captane John erle of Oxfoord; in the right wing of the vanward he placyd Gilbert Talbot to defend the same; in the left veryly he sat John Savage; and himself, trusting to thayd of Thomas Stanley, with one troupe of horsemen, and a fewe footemen dyd folow; for the number of all his soldiers, all maner of ways, was scarce v.^m. besydes the Stanleyans, wheroft about 3.^m. wer at the battaill, under the conduct of William. The kings forces were twyse so many and more. Thus both the vanwardes being arrayed, as soone as the soldiers might one se an other afur of, they put on ther head peeces and preparyd to the fyght, expecyng thalarme with intentyve care. Ther was a marishe betwixt both hostes, which Henry of purpose left on the right hand, that yt might serve his men instede of a fortresse, by the doing therof also he left the soon upon his bak; but whan the king saw thenemyes passyd the marishe, he commandyd his soldiers to geave charge uppon them. They making suddanely great showtes assaultyd thennemy first with arrowes, who wer nothing faynt unto the fyght but began also to shoote feareely; but whan they cam to hand strokes the matter than was delt with blades. In the meane tyme therle of Oxfoord, fearing lest hys men in fyghting might be enyronyd of the multitude, commandyd in every rang that no soldiers should go above tenfoote from the standerds; which charge being knownen, whan all men had throng thik togethers, and stayd a whyle from fighting, thadversaryes wer therwith aferd, supposing soom fraude, and so they all forbore the fight a certane space, and that veryly dyd many with right goodwill, who rather covetyd the king dead than alyve, and therfor fowght fayntly. Than therle of Oxford in one part, and others in an other part,

with the bandes of men closse one to an other, gave freshe charge uppon thenemy, and in array tryangle vehemently renewyd the conflict. Whyle the battayll contynewyd thus hote on both sydes betwixt the vanwardes, king Richard understood, first by espyalls wher erle Henry was a farre of with smaule force of soldiers abowt him; than after drawing nerer he knew yt perfytely by evydent signes and tokens that yt was Henry; wherfor, all inflamyd with ire, he strick his horse with the spurres, and runneth owt of thone syde withoutt the vanwardes agaynst him. Henry perceavyd king Richerd coome uppon him, and because all his hope was than in valyaney of armes, he receavyd him with great corage. King Richerd at the first brunt killyd certane, overthrew Henryes standerd, toygther with William Brandon the standerd bearer, and matchyd also with John Cheney a man of muche fortytude, far exceeding the common sort, who encountered with him as he cam, but the king with great force drove him to the ground, making way with weapon on every syde. But yeat Henry abode the brunt longer than ever his owne soldiers wold have wenyd, who wer now almost owt of hope of victory, whan as loe William Stanley with thre thowsand men came to the reskew: than trewly in a very moment the resydew all fled, and king Richerd alone was killyd fyghting manfully in the thickkest presse of his enemyes. In the mean time also the erle of Oxford after a lyttle bickering put to flight them that fowght in the forward, wheroft a great company wer killed in the chase. But many mo forbare to fyght, who came to the fielde with king Richerd for aw, and for no goodwill, and departyd withoutt any daunger, as men who desyryd not the safety but destruction of that prince whom they hatyd. Ther wer killyd about a m. men, and emongest them of noblemen of warre John duke of Norfolk, Gwalter L. Ferryse, Robert Brakkenbury, Rycherd Ratelyff and many moe. Two days after at Leycester, William Catesby, lawyer,

Wm. Bran-
done the
standerd
bearer to
E. of Rich-
mond over-
thrown.

R. 3.
slayne.

Noblemen
and others
slayne.

with a few that wer his felowys, were executyd. And of those that tooke them to ther fete Frauncis L. Loovell, Humfrey Staffoord, with Thomas his brother and muche more company, fled into the sayntuary of Saint John which is at Colchester, a toune by the sea syde in Essex. As for the number of captyves yt was very great; for whan king Richerd was killyd, all men furthwith threw away weapon, and frely submyttd them selfes to Henries obeyssance, wherof the most part wold have doone the same at the beginning, yf for king Rycherds scurryers, scowring to and fro, they myght so have doone. Emongest them the chiefe wer Henry erle of Northumberland, and Thomas erle of Surrey. This man was commytyd to ward, wher he remaynyd long; he as frind in hart was receavyd into favor. Henry lost in that battayll scarce an hundredth soldiers, emongst whom there was one princypall man, William Brandon, who bare erle Henries standerd. The feilde was fowghten the xjth. calends of September, in the yere of mans salvation M.CCCC.LXXXVJ, and the fight lasted more than two houres.

Wm.
Catesby
with others
executed at
Lestere.

Wm.
Brandone
slayne.

The report is that king Richerd might have sowght to save himself by flight; for they who wer abowt him, seing the soldiers even from the first stroke to lyft up ther weapons febly and fayntlye, and soome of them to depart the feild prvyly, suspectyd treason, and exhortyd him to flye, yea and whan the matter began manyfestly to qwaile, they browght him swyft horses; but he, who was not ignorant that the people hatyd him, owt of hope to have any better hap afterward, ys sayd to have awnsweryd, that that very day he wold make end ether of warre or lyfe, suche great fearcenesse and suche huge force of mynd he had: wherfor, knowinge certanely that that day wold ether yeald him a peaceable and quyet realme from thencefurth or els perpetually bereve him the same, he came to the fielde with the crowne uppon his head, that therby he might ether make a beginning or ende of his

raigne. And so the myserable man had suddaynly suche end as wont ys to happen to them that have right and law both of God and man in lyke estimation, as will, impyetic, and wickednes. Surely these are more vehement examples by muche than ys hable to be utteryd with toong to tereyfy those men which suffer no time to passe free from soome haynous offence, creweltie, or mischief.

Henry, after the victory obtaynyd, gave furthwith thanks unto Almighty God for the same; than after, replenysshed with joy incredible, he got himself unto the next hill, wher, after he had commendyd his solders, and commandyd to cure the woundyd, and to bury them that wer slane, he gave unto the noblytie and gentlemen immortal thankes, promysing that he wold be myndfull of ther benyfyttes, all which meane whyle the soldiers cryed, God save king Henry, God save king Henry! and with hart and hand utteryd all the shew of joy that might be; which whan Thomas Stanley dyd see, he set anon king Richerds crowne, which was fownd among the spoyle in the feilde, uppon his head, as though he had bene already by commandment of the people proclamyd king—after the maner of his auncestors, and that was the first signe of prosperytic. After that, commanding to pak upp all bag and baggage, Henry with his victorious army procedyd in the evening to Leycester, wher, for refreshsing of his soldiers from ther travaile and panes, and to prepare for going to London, he taryed two days. In the meane time the body of king Rycherd nakyd of all clothing, and layd uppon an horse bake with the armes and legges hanginge downe on both sydes, was browght to thabbay of monks Franciscanes at Leycester, a myserable spectacle in good sooth, but not unwoorthy for the mans lyfe, and ther was buryed two days after without any pompe or solemne funerall. He raigned two yeres and so many monethes, and one day over. He was lyttle of stature, deformyd of body, thone showlde being

higher than thother, a short and sowre countenance, which semyd to savor of mischief, and utter evydently craft and deceyt. The whyle he was thinking of any matter, he dyd contynually byte his nether lyppe, as thowgh that crewell nature of his did so rage agaynst yt self in that lyttle carkase. Also he was woont to be ever with his right hand pulling out of the sheath to the myddest, and putting in agane, the dagger which he did alway were. Trewly he had a sharp witt, provydent and subtyle, apt both to counterfayt and dissemble ; his corage also hault and fearee, which faylyd him not in the very death, which, whan his men forsooke him, he rather yealded to take with the swoord, than by fowle flyght to prolong his lyfe, uncertane what death perchance soon after by sicknes or other vyolence to suffer.

THE END OF THISTORY OF KING RICHERD THE THIRD.

ERRATA.

- Page 181, line penult. for *hart*, read *hurt*.
,, 187, line 25, for *enjoyned*, read *enjoyed*.
,, 205, line 26, for *thiglyshe*, read *thinglyshe*.
,, 213, line 2, for *man*, read *men*.

I N D E X.

- ABBEVILLE, 54
Abingdon, 151
Alanson, John duke of, 63, 64, 73
——— taken prisoner, 9
——— ransom of, 17
Albany, Alexander duke of, brother to James K. of Scotland, leagues with Edw. IV., 169, 170
——— killed in running at tilt, 171
Aleyn, John, 153
Alis, da. of the E. of Salisbury, married to Richard Neville, 22
All Souls College, Oxford, founded, 70
Amboise, 129, 130
Amiens, 54
——— territory about, spoiled, 67
Anne, da. of the E. of Warwick, affianced to Edward, son of Henry VI., 131
Aquitaine reduced to obedience by the French in 1452, 80
Arras, treaty of, 53, 55
Arthur, brother of the earl of Britany, made earl of Richmond, 13
——— constable of France, 28
——— admiral of France, 59, 63
Artois, 54
Arundel, Thomas earl of, 41
Arundel, Tho. E. of, takes St. Selerine, 50, 51
——— killed near the castle of Gerbory in Beauvois, 53
Arundel, sir Thomas, 200
Athol, Walter earl of, 62, 63
Avranches besieged by the K. of France, 63
Auxerre, 30, 31

Baieux, 79
Banbury, battle of, 123
Bannister, Humfrey, betrays the duke of Buckingham, 199, 201
Barnet, battle of, 144
Barry, Rhenate D. of, 41, 42
——— taken prisoner, 42
Baune, John, 109
Bayonne, the last city of Aquitaine, reduced by the French, 81
Beacons prepared in Wales and other places, 213
Beaufort, card^l., son of John duke of Lancaster, goes to France, 15
——— appointed by Pope Martin V. to be legate in the war against the Bohemians, 32

- Beaufort, card^{l.} commanded to go first into France, 33
 ——— proceeds to Germany, 34
 ——— accompanies Henry VI. to his coronation in France, 39
 ——— returns to England on account of disturbances, 45
 ——— goes again to the King at Rouen with supplies, 46
 ——— his death, 74
- Beaulieu, or Bewley Abbey, Q. Margaret goes into sanctuary at, 148
- Beaumont, 42
- Beauvais, ambush laid by the earl of Arundel, 41
- Bedford, John duke of, made regent of France, 2
 ——— his oration to the nobility there, 3
 ——— marries Joan sister of the D. of Burgundy, 5
 ——— wins Yvers, 7
 ——— retakes Vernoyll, 8, 9
 ——— returns to England to reconcile the nobility, 14
 ——— fortifies Paris, 35
 ——— his oration to the French nobility upon Henry VIth arrival in Paris, 40
 ——— marries Jaquet da. of Peter of Lucemburgh E. of St. Pol, 47
 ——— his death, 58
- Berkley, William, 200
- Berwick, town of, delivered to the Scots, 112
- Beverly, 137
- Blunt, James, 202, 212
- Bombards, 9
- Booth, Laurence, archbishop of York, 158
- Bourchier, *see* Bourscher, Burscher.
- Bordeaux recovered by the English, 91
 ——— again taken by the French, 93
- Bourscher (Bourchier) Thomas, abp. of Canterbury and cardinal, 96, 113
- Bowhan, or Boughan, earl of, constable of France, 6
 ——— killed at the battle of Vernoyll, 9, 13
- Brakenbury, Robert, 219
 ——— receives the order to murder Edward V. and his brother, but refuses, 188
 ——— slain at Bosworth field, 224
- Brandon, sir William, 200
 ——— slain by Rich. III.
 ——— at Bosworth, 222, 225
- Bray, Reginald, concerts with the duke of Buckingham against king Richard III., 195
 ——— assists the countess of Richmond's party, 196
- Britany, wasted by the English, 16
 ——— accidents to the dukes of, 80
- Britany, duke of, furnishes the earl of Richmond for his journey, 204
 ——— after Henry's flight from Britany, sends the residue of his train to him, 208
- Brooke, Edward, 87
- Browne, Nicholas, 16
- Browne, sir George, put to death, 204
- Buckingham, Henry duke of, 174, 178

- Buckingham, Henry duke of, receives Morton bishop of Ely into custody, 182
— publishes Richard III.'s title at the Guildhall, 185
— dissension between him and Richard III., 192
— demands his part of the earl of Hereford's lands, 193
— goes into Wales, 194
— consults with the bishop of Ely respecting the earl of Richmond's title, *ibid.*
— sent for by K. Richard, 198
— makes war, but is forsaken by his soldiers, 199
— betrayed by Bannister, *ibid.*, 201
— beheaded, 201
- Buckingham, Humphrey duke of, 98, 193
— slain at Northampton, 107
- Bullenois, 54
- Burgundy, Charles D. of, sides with king Edward IV., 130
- Burgundy, Philip D. of, 23, 68
— sends ambassadors to treat of peace between K. Henry VI. and France, 57
— besieges Calais, 60
— concludes a truce with the English, 61
- Burscher (Bourchier) Henry, made earl of Essex, 113
— marries Elizabeth sister to Richard duke of York, *ibid.* 114
- Burscher, William, marries Anne da. of the earl of St. Pol, 114
- Burscher, John, 200
- Burshere, sir Thomas, 219, 220.
- Bury, parliament held at, 72
- Butler, Arnold, joins the earl of Richmond, 216
- Bylles, Robert, 185
- Cade, John, rebellion headed by, 84
— taken and executed, 86
- Caen, 78
- Calais fortified by the D. of Bedford, 47
— besieged by the D. of Burgundy, but relieved, 60, 61
- Caninge, Thomas, 85
- Cannon, invention of, 9
- Canterbury, Thomas archbishop of, 178
- Castle Galiarde, 77
- Catesby, William, executed, 225
- Cecily, duchess of York, her complaint of her son Richard accusing her of adultery, 184, 185
- Cecily, daughter of Edward IV., 169
- Chalton, Thomas, 85
- Charles VIth of France dies, 2
- Charles VIIth advanced to the title of King, 4
— crowned at Rheims, 30
— receives Compeigne, Beauvois, and Senlis into his obedience, 35
— recovers Melun, Corbole, &c., 41
— his salutation to the D. of Burgundy, after the treaty of Arras, 54

- Charles VIIth assails Normandy, 63,
64
——— repulsed at St. Selerine,
68
——— his death, 97
- Charles VIII. of France, 202
——— aids Henry earl of Rich-
mond, 208
——— pledges left with, for
money lent to earl Henry, 215
- Chastillon, battle of, 92
——— lost to the French, 93
- Chelley, John, 153
- Cheyney, Humfrey, 214
- Cheyney, sir John, 196, 200
——— slain at Bosworth field by Rich.
III., 224
- Chemp, John, abp. of York, *v.* Kemp.
- Chenlet, John, 164, 166
- Chenneth, James, bishop of St. An-
drew's, 100
- Cherburgh, 79
- Chertsey Abbey founded, 156
- Chicheley, Henry, archbishop of Can-
terbury, 11
——— death and character of, 70
- Clarence, George, brother of Edw. IV.,
made duke of, 113
——— adheres to the earl of War-
wick, and marries his daughter, 120,
121
——— arrives from Calais, 123
——— comes to London to treat with
the king, 126
——— flies to France, 128
——— leagues with the earl of War-
wick, 131
- Clarenee, Geo. duke of, joined in com-
mission with the E. of Warwick for the
government of the realm, 134
——— reconciled to Edw. IV., 136
——— returns, 141
——— present at the murder of Ed-
ward, son of Henry VI., 152
——— committed to the Tower, 167
——— the manner of his death, *ibid.*,
168
- Clifford, sir John, 96
- Clifforde, John lord, defends Pontoise, 65
- Clyfford, sir Roger, put to death, 204
- Compeigne, town of, 6
- Constans, town of, 77
- Corbeille, Vincennes, and Meulan taken
by the French, 53
- Corbie, 54
- Corn, act for exporting, 69
- Courtney, Peter, bishop of Exeter, 200
- Courtney, Thomas, earl of Devon, 87,
148, 150
——— killed at Tewkesbury, 152
- Cravaunt besieged by Cha. VII., 6
- Crosby, John, 142
- Crotoy, 6
- Curson, Thomas, 78
- Dalley, taken by Henry earl of Rich-
mond, 216
- Dammartine, 31
- Daubeny, sir Giles, 196, 200
- Delore, Ambrose, 10, 37, 42, 43, 48
- Derby, Henry earl of, 192
- Derby, Thomas earl of, 135
- Devonshire, Edward earl of, 200

Devonshire, Thomas earl of; *see* Courtenay.
 Dieppe taken by Peter of Rokeford, 52
 ——— besieged by lord Talbot, 67
 Digby, Simon, 221
 Dorchester, Thomas earl of, 64, 69
 Dorset, Thomas marquis of, 175, 200,
 203, 210, 214
 Douglas, earl of, slain, 99
 Draper, Robert, 133
 Dymmok, sir Thomas, beheaded, 127

Edgecombe, sir Richard, 200
 Edgecote, battle of, 128
 Edward IVth proclaimed king, 109
 ——— his character, 110, 172
 ——— makes his brothers dukes,
 113
 ——— his liberality, 116
 ——— he coins ryals, nobles, and
 groats, *ibid.*
 ——— marries Eliz. Widvyle, wi-
 dow of sir John Gray, 117
 ——— ground of his quarrel with
 Richard E. of Warwick, *ibid.*
 ——— sent prisoner to Middleham
 Castle, but escapes, 124
 ——— flies with his brother Rich-
 ard into Flanders, 133
 ——— proclaimed a traitor, 134
 ——— arrives again in England, 136
 ——— pretends to claim the duke-
 dom of York only, 137
 ——— comes to York, and is re-
 ceived on taking an oath which he
 meant to break, 138, 139

CAMD. SOC.

Edward IVth arrives at Nottingham, 140
 ——— at London, 142
 ——— levies forces and goes to
 Marlborough, 150, 151
 ——— sends messengers to the
 duke of Britany for the delivery up
 of the earls of Pembroke and Rich-
 mond, 158
 ——— joins the D. of Burgundy
 in war with France, 160
 ——— sends an army to France in
 aid of the duke of Burgundy, 161
 ——— sends to the D. of Britany
 to have the earl of Richmond deliv-
 ered, but fails, 164, 165, 166, 167
 ——— falls sick, 171
 ——— his will, and death, *ibid.*
 ——— his issue, 172
 ——— description of his person,
 ibid.
 Edward son of Henry VI. born, 90
 ——— affianced to Anne, da. of the
 earl of Warwick, 131
 ——— killed in Edward the IVths pre-
 sence, 152
 ——— buried at Tewkesbury, *ibid.*
 Edward Vth, 174
 ——— lodged with the duke of
 Glouster at the bishop of London's
 palace, 176
 ——— murdered, with his brother,
 in the Tower, 122, 129
 Edward, son of Rich. III. his death,
 192
 Edward, son of George duke of Clas-
 rence, made earl of Warwick, 163
 Edwardes, William, 153

2 n

- Egremond, Thomas lord, slain in the battle of Northampton, 107
- Elizabeth, queen of Edw. IV., 195
 ——— flies to sanctuary, where she brought forth her son Edward, 133
 ——— flies again to sanctuary at Westminster, with her children, after Edw. IV.'s death, 175
 ——— persons sent to treat with her, 178
 ——— delivers up her younger son, *ibid.*
 ——— persuaded by K. Rich. to quit the sanctuary, 210
- Elizabeth, daughter of Edw. IV. married to Charles prince of France, 163
 ——— the several matches proposed for her, 195, 196
- Eugenius IVth. Pope, endeavours to make peace between England and France, 44, 54
- Exeter, John earl of Huntingdon made duke of, 69, 144
 ——— escapes from the battle of Barnet and flies to sanctuary, 147
 ——— his end, 163
- Falaise, 79
- Fastolfe, John, 21, 28
- Fauconbridge, bastard of, attempts to surprise London, 153
 ——— beheaded, 154
- Ferryse, Walter lord, 114
 ——— killed in the battle of Bosworth, 224
- Fescant (Fecamp), 78
- Fitzjames, 109
- Fortescue, sir John, 208
- Fougieres, town of, taken, 75
- Fox, Richard, aft. bishop of Winchester, joins Henry E. of Richmond, 209
- Francisce, an Arragonois, takes Fougieres, 75
- Gardener, Richard, 133
- Gedding, sir John, 109
- Geneve, the old name for Orleans, 19
- Gerbory, castle of, in Beauvois, 52
- German merchants restored, 159
- Gloucester, fatality of the title of, 73
- Gloucester, Hugh Spencer earl of, 73
- Gloucester, Humphrey duke of, made Protector, 1
 ——— marries Jacobin princess of Bavaire, 5
 ——— seizes Mounts in right of his wife, 11
 ——— leaves her in Brabant to defend her own possessions, 12
 ——— the bishop of Rome gives sentence against the duke of Gloucester's marriage, *ibid.*
 ——— summons a parliament to provide supplies, 46
 ——— relieves Calais, and ravages the country round, 60, 61
 ——— his oration at the parliament of 1445, 69, 70
 ——— his conduct looked into, 71
 ——— impeached, 72
 ——— murdered at Bury, 73

- Gloucester, Richard, brother of Edw.
 IVth. made duke of, 113
 ——— flies with Edw. IVth. to
 Flanders, 133
 ——— reconciles Edw. IVth. and
 Clarence, 141
 ——— present at the murder of
 Edward, son of Hen. VI., 152
 ——— continual report that he
 was the murderer of king Henry VI.
 156
 ——— enters and wastes Scotland,
 170
 ——— has the tuition of his bro-
 ther's children bequeathed to him,
 171, 173
 ——— swears obedience to prince
 Edward, 173
 ——— takes possession of him,
 174
 ——— assumes the government,
 176
 ——— his address to the nobility,
 ibid. 177
 ——— his speech to the lords as-
 sembled in the Tower, 180, 181
 ——— practises with Dr. Ralph
 Sha to publish his claim to the crown,
 183. *See* Richard III.
 Gloucester, Thomas of Woodstock, luke
 of, 73
 Gorney, conflict at, 41, 79
 Gough, Matthew, 42
 ——— taken prisoner, *ibid.*
 ——— slain on London Bridge, 86
 Gray, sir John, 117
 Gray, sir Richard, 174
 Gray, sir Richard, apprehended and sent
 prisoner to Pomfret Castle, 175
 ——— why committed, 177
 ——— beheaded, 182, 187
 Gryfyne, one, joins the earl of Rich-
 mond in Wales, 217
 Guisnes, 105
 Gylfoord, sir Richard, 196, 197
 Gysors, town of, 77
 Hall, sir David, 109
 Halwell, John, 200
 Hammes, castle of, holds with the earl
 of Richmond, 212, 213
 Hareflewe, 78
 Harrington, sir Guy, 109
 Hastings, Ralph, 109
 Hastings, William lord, 125
 ——— present when Edward son of
 Hen. VIth was murdered, 152
 ——— his earnestness for Edward
 Vth to be crowned, 179
 ——— attends the council in the
 Tower, and is beheaded, 180, 181
 ——— one of the smyters of prince
 Edward son of Henry VIth, 181
 Haule, David, 78
 Henry VIth committed to the care of
 Katherine his mother, 2
 ——— proclaimed king of England
 and Francee, 3
 ——— crowned at Paris, 40
 ——— departs for Rouen, 45
 ——— returns to England, 47
 ——— marries Margaret daughter
 of Rhenate duke of Anjou and king
 of Sicily, 68

- Henry VIth, Polydore Virgil's character of him, 70, 71
 ——— removes to Coventry, 98
 ——— taken prisoner at Northampton, 107
 ——— his misfortunes, 108
 ——— flies with his Queen to Scotland, 111
 ——— the statutes of his reign repealed, 113
 ——— returns from Scotland, but is defeated at Hexham and goes back, 114
 ——— comes in disguise to England, is made prisoner, and brought to London, 115
 ——— released from the Tower, 133
 ——— prognosticates the success of Hen. VII., 135
 ——— taken by Edw. IV. in London, 143
 ——— murdered in the Tower, 155, 156
 ——— his corpse exposed at St. Paul's and buried at Chertsey, 156
 ——— description of his person, *ibid.*, 157
- Henry VIIth. *See* Richmond, earl of.
- Herbert, Gilbert, 219
 Herbert, Walter, 215, 216, 217
 Hereford, Humphrey earl of, 192
 ——— his family and the division of his inheritance, 192, 193
 Hexham, battle of, 114
 Howard, John lord, 178
 ——— made D. of Norfolk, 190
- Howard, Thomas, made earl of Surrey, 190
 Hulderne, Robert, beheaded, 122
 Huline, William, 85
 Hungerford, Robert earl of, 115
 Hungerford, sir Walter, 219, 220
 Hutton, Thomas, sent ambassador to Britany, 191, 200
 Hyre, Stephen, 16, 21, 52
- Jacobine of Bavaria married to Humph. D. of Gloucester, her former husband being still alive, 5
 ——— goes back, upon the Pope's sentence, to her former husband, 12
 James I., K. of Scots, joins the French, 11
 ——— death of, 62
 James II. succeeds, 63
 ——— invades England, 99
 ——— slain by accident at Roxburgh, *ibid.*
 ——— his issue, 100
 James III. K. of Scots, 100, 135
 ——— receives Henry VI. and his Queen, 111, 112
 Jargeaux, 28
 Joane, sister of the D. of Burgundy, 5
 "Joane Pucelle." *See* MAID of ORLEANS.
 John, bastard son of Cha. duke of Orleans, 21, 25, 48
- Katherine, Q. of Henry V. 2
 ——— death of, 61

- Katherine, Q. of Henry V., interred at Westminster, 62
- Kemp, John, made ab^p of York, 61
— transl. to Canterbury, 90
— his death, 96
- Kent invaded by the French, 99, 100
- Kent, William Fauconbridge made earl of, 113
-
- Laignie besieged, 37
— again besieged by the duke of Bedford, 48, 49
- Land, Thomas de la, 128
- Landofe, Peter, 166, 205, 206, 207
- Lavalle, 28
- Lee, Richard, mayor of London, 133
- Lewis, son of the K. of Fr. marries the K. of Scots daughter, 62
— conspires against his father, 64
- Lewis XIth. K. of France succeeds his father, 97
— his admiration of the earl of Warwick, 129
— his faithlessness, 169
- Lewys, the countess of Richmond's physician, 195, 196, 197
- Leyre, 20
- Limbrike, sir Walter, 109
- Lisieux, 76, 79
- London, tumult in against the Flemings, 57
— John Cade enters, 84, 85
— attacked by the Kentish men in 1471, 133
— Edward IVths. entry into, 143
- London bridge fired by the rebel Cade, 85
-
- Londoners rise upon the merchant strangers, 98, 99
- Longstrother, John, master of the knights of Rhodes, 148
- Lovell, Francis lord, flies from Bosworth field, 225
- Louviers taken by lord Willoughby and Thomas Tirrell, 51
- Lucembrough, James of, earl of St. Pol, 114
- Lucembrough, Lewis of, constable of France, 160
- Lucemburge, John of, 37
- Lucemburge, Lewis, bishop of Terouenne, 35
- Lucemburgh, Lewis of, constable of France, beheaded, 163
- Lucemburgh, Peter of, earl of St. Pol, 67, 68
- Lynne, Edw. IV. and his brother Richard take the shipping at, 133
-
- Magdalen college, Oxford, foundation of, 74
- Magdune, 25, 29
— taken by lord Talbot, 28
- "Maid of Orleans," account of the, 25
— — — — — defends Laignie, 37
— — — — — taken prisoner, *ibid*
— — — — — burnt at Rouen, 38
- Mante, 76
- Margaret, da. of the D. of Somerset, afterwards countess of Richmond, 12, 13, 62, 135, 195
— her servants removed from her, 204

- Margaret, da. of Rhenate duke of Anjou
 married to K. Henry VI. 68, 77
 — her character, and ambition
 towards the duke of Gloucester's go-
 vernment, 71
 — flies with her son Edward to
 Scotland, 107
 — seeks refuge there with the
 King, 111
 — goes into France to her father
 the duke of Anjou, 112
 — with her son arrives again in
 France, 131
 — attempts to land in England,
 but is driven back, 134
 — taken prisoner at Tewkesbury,
 152
 — carried to London, ransomed,
 and suffered to depart, 152
 — again arrives with her son in
 England, 147
 — takes sanctuary at Beaulieu,
 148
 — goes to Bath, 150
 — to Bristol, 151. Thence to
 Tewkesbury, *ibid.*
 Margaret daughter of George duke of
 Clarence, 160
 Margaret sister of Edw. IV. married to
 Charles, son of Philip D. of Burgundy,
 116
 Marine, Gwilliam, 5
 Martin Vth. Pope, makes war on the
 Bohemians, 32
 Maryn, William, 185
 Mayne, town of, revolts to the French,
 17
- Mayne, recovered, 18
 Merchant strangers allowed to sell to
 Englishmen only, 63
 Meulan won by the French, but recov-
 ered, 4
 — again taken by the French, 53
 Milford Haven, 216
 Montacute, John marquis of, 113, 114,
 130, 134, 144, 146
 — returns to Edw. IV., 136
 — — — neglects to attack Edw.
 IVth. in his way to London, 137
 — — — slain at the battle of Barnet,
 146
 Montarge, siege of, 15, 16
 Morgan, John, brings forces to the earl
 of Richmond after his landing, 217
 Morgan, John, 215
 Morton, John, bishop of Ely, 180, 198,
 200, 206
 — committed to prison by Richard
 D. of Gloucester protector, 181
 — afterwards giveu in charge to
 the duke of Buckingham and sent to
 Brecknock, 182
 Murray, Archibald earl of, 99
- Neville, George, archbishop of York,
 119, 121, 135, 142
 — sent prisoner to Guisnes, 157
 Neville, Richard, 22
 Neville, William, 23
 Newcastle, 78
 Nicholas the card¹. sent into Fiance to
 negotiate a peace, 44, 53

- Norfolk, John duke of, leads the archers at Bosworth field, 222
 ——— slain in the battle, 224
- Norland, Thomas, 185
- Normandy recovered by the French, A.D. 1451, 79
- Normans rise in rebellion against Hen. VI. but are subdued, 51, 52
- Northampton, battle of, 107, 122, 123
- Northumberland, Henry second earl of, slain at St. Albans's, 96
 ——— Henry third earl of, slain at Towton, 111
 ——— Henry fourth earl of, 170
- Orleans besieged by the E. of Salisbury, 21
 ——— offer of the surrender refused, 24
 ——— relieved by the "Pucelle," *ibid.* 25
- Orleans, bastard of, 48
- Orleans, Charles duke of, released from his captivity, 66
- Orleans, Lewis duke of, his opposition to the E. of Richmond's cause, 214
- Osmond bishop of Salisbury canonized, 96, 97
- Oxford, John earl of, 131, 132, 140, 144, 145, 146, 208, 212
 ——— sent prisoner to the castle of Hammes, 158
 ——— commands the archers on the side of Hen. VII. at Bosworth, 223
- Paris, plot for the betrayal of, 6
 ——— fortified by the duke of Bedford, 35
 ——— surrendered by lord Willoughbie, 59, 60
- Parisians send ambassadors to K. Hen. VI., 5
- Parliament called at Westm^r 1439, 63
 ——— of 1445, 68
 ——— removed to Bury, 72
 ——— of 1473, 159
- Parre, sir John, 100
- Patay, 29
- Patillok, Richard, 11
- Pembrough, Jasper earl of, 62, 109, 131, 148, 154
 ——— besieged at Pembroke, 155
 ——— sails to France with the E. of Richm^d, 155
 ——— and is courteously received, 158
- Pembroke, William Herbert, earl of, defeated in Yorkshire, 122, 123
 ——— taken prisoner at the battle of Banbury and beheaded, 123
- Peningham, Edward, 200
- Perronne, 54
- Picquigny, truce upon the bridge of, 162, 163
- Poinings, Edward, 208
- Ponte de l'arch taken by the French, 76
- Pontieu, 54
- Prayers for success in France, 11
- Ramney, sir Thomas, 196, 197

- Ramney, sir Thomas, put to death, 204
 Rately, Richard, 127
 ——— slain at Bosworth field, 224
 Ravensporue, Edw. IV. arrives at, 136
 Rhenate duke of Anjou, 131
 Richard III. takes upon him as king, 126
 ——— journeys to York, 187
 ——— his answer upon the D. of Buckingham's claim for part of the earl of Hereford's lands, 193
 ——— goes with an army against the duke of Buckingham, 199
 ——— his lavishness in rewards, and need, 204
 ——— sends new offers to the D. of Britany, 205, 206
 ——— persuades the Q. of Edw. IV. with her children to leave sanctuary, 210
 ——— death of his Queen, 211
 ——— sets out against the earl of Richmond, 219
 ——— arrives at Bosworth, 221
 ——— his reported dream, *ibid.*
 ——— seeks a personal combat with the earl of Richmond, but is slain, 222
 ——— his crown found upon the field, and placed by lord Stanley on the earl of Richmond's head, 226
 ——— his body buried with the Franciscans at Leicester, *ibid.*
 ——— description of his person, *ibid.*, 227
 Richmond, Edmund earl of, 62
 Richmond, Henry earl of, afterwards Henry VII. born, 62
 Richmond, Henry earl of, brought up in Wales, 134
 ——— sails to France with his uncle Jasper earl of Pembroke, 155
 ——— courteously received there, 158
 ——— delivered up by the D. of Britany, but again detained, 165, 166
 ——— attempts his descent on England, but his fleet scattered, 201, 202
 ——— promises on oath to marry Elizabeth K. Edw. IV's daughter, 203
 ——— flies with his friends to France, 206, 207
 ——— arrives at Milford Haven, 216
 ——— his anxiety to assure himself of lord Stanley's joining him, 220
 ——— misses his way while following his army, *ibid.*, 221
 ——— meets lord Stanley at Atherstone, 221
 ——— gains the victory, 225
 ——— prepares to go to London, 226
 Rivers, Richard earl, slain, 123
 Rokeforde, Peter of, 52
 Rotherham, Thomas, archbishop of York, 180, 211
 ——— imprisoned by order of Rich. III., 181
 ——— subsequently committed to the custody of sir James Tirrell, 182
 Rouen, taken by the French, 78
 Roxborough besieged, 99

- Russell, John, bishop of Lincoln, lord chancellor, 180
- Rutland, Edmond earl of, 108
- Ryvers, Anthony earl, 174
- apprehended and sent to Pomfret Castle, 175
- why committed, 177
- beheaded, 182, 187
- St. Alban's, battle of, 95, 96
- second battle of, 109
- St. Bernard's college, in Oxford, 70
- St. Denis, town of, taken by treason, 36
- twice taken by the French, 53
- taken by Arthur, admiral of France, 59
- St. James Town, repaired by the D. of Somerset, 12
- Arthur E. of Brittany repulsed from, 14
- St. Lo, 78
- St. Maloës, 166
- St. Michael's Mount, kept by the earl of Oxford against K. Edw. IV., 158
- St. Pol, earl of. *See* Lucenburgh.
- St. Quintin, 54
- St. Selerine, castle of, 79
- besieged, 42
- taken by the earl of Arundel, 50, 51
- St. Susanne's, town of, taken, 10
- St. Valery taken by the French, 48
- retaken by the earl of St. Pol and lord Willoughby, 49
- Salisbury, earl of, besieges Orleans, 19
- slain whilst standing at a window, 22
- Salisbury, Richard Neville earl of, takes part with the duke of York, 94
- repairs with an army to London, and joins battle with the lord Audley, 102, 103
- beheaded, 109
- Salisbury, Tho. Montacute earl of, 6
- retakes Meulan, 4
- besieges and takes Mountes, 9
- takes the castle of Mayon, 10
- Sanfoord, Bryan, 221
- Savage, John, 215, 216, 221
- Saye, John, lord treasurer of England, beheaded by Cade, 85
- Scotland, many noblemen of, slain at Vernoyll, 9
- peace concluded with, 46, 205
- Selenger, Sir Thomas, put to death, 204
- Sens besieged, 4
- Sha, or Shaw, Ralph, his sermon at St. Paul's Cross, in favour of Richard D. of Gloucester's claim to the Crown, 123
- dies of sorrow, 185
- Shrewsbury, John Talbot earl of, slain at Northampton, 107. *See* Talbot.
- Silly, town of, 50
- Somerset, Edm. duke of, 36, 77, 79, 87, 154
- lieutenant of Normandy, 12
- with the duke of York made regents of France, 58
- placed under restraint, 88
- impeached, 89
- slain and buried at St. Albans, 96
- his issue, *ibid.*

- Somerset, Edmund (2^d of the name)
 —— duke of, 142, 144, 146, 149, 152
 —— joins queen Margaret at Bewley Abbey, 148
- Somerset, Henry duke of, 98
 —— made captain of Calais, 105
 —— joins Edw. IV. but revolts, 114
 —— taken prisoner and beheaded at Hexham, *ibid.* 115
- Spencer, Hugh. *See Gloucester.*
- Stafforde, Humfrey, created duke of Gloucester, 69
- Stafford, sir Humfrey, sent against Jack Cade, 84
- Stafford, Humfrey, 225
- Stafford, John, abp of Canterbury, 70
 —— death of, 90
- Stafford, Thomas, 193, 225
- Stanley, Thomas lord, 195, 204
 —— refuses to join the earl of Warwick, 128
 —— wins Berwick, 170
 —— committed to prison by Richard D. of Gloucester, 181
 —— delivered, 182
 —— of the earl of Richmond's confederacy, 212
 —— confers with him before the battle of Bosworth, 218
- Stanley, William lord, 212
 —— confers with the earl of Richmond, 218
 —— comes to the rescue at Bosworth, 224
- Statutes repealed by K. Hen. VI. revived, 159
- Steward, John, slain at Vernoyll, 9
- Stokton, John, 142
- Strange, George lord, 212, 218
- Strange, Thomas lord, 182
- Suffolk, William Pole earl of, 6, 18, 20, 69
 —— captain of Mountes, 10
- Suffolk, W^m. marquis of, 77
 —— the principal contriver of the murder of Humphrey duke of Gloucester, 74, 77, 83, 87
 —— made duke of Suffolk, *ibid.*
 —— banished, but murdered in his passage to France, 83
- Talbot, Gilbert, 223
 —— joins the earl of Richmond, 218
- Talbot, John lord, 18, 20, 27, 64, 66, 79, 90
 —— his character, 15
 —— recovers Maine, 18
 —— takes Pontoise, 19
 —— made prisoner, 29
 —— ransomed, 48
 —— again leaves England with an army, and takes Beaumont, 50
 —— besieges Dieppe, 67
 —— made earl of Shrewsbury, 69
 —— goes to Aquitaine, 90, 91
 —— slain at Chastillon, 92
- Terouenne, or Terwine, earl of St. Pol's house at, 47
- Tewkesbury, battle of, 151, 152
- Thomas, Morgan, besieges the E. of Pembroke, 155
- Thomas, Richard, 215, 216, 219

- Thomas, Richard, promised the lieutenancy of Wales, 217
 Tirrell, Thomas, 37, 51, 64, 79
 Tolongane, Anthonye, 42
 Touchet, James, 103
 Tours, sword hanging in the church of St. Catherine at, demanded by the Maid of Orleans, 25
 Towton, battle of, 110
 Trolop, Andrew, 104
 —— slain, 111
 Troyes, 30
 Tudor, Owen, marries Katherine Q. of Hen. V., 62
 —— committed to ward, and afterwards beheaded, *ibid.*
 Tyrrell, James, the murderer of Edw. V. and his brother, 188
- Vaughan, Roger, beheaded, 155
 Vaughan, sir Thomas, 174
 —— apprehended and sent prisoner to Pomfret castle, 175
 —— why committed, 177
 —— beheaded, 182, 187
 Udevill, John, 123
 Vernon besieged, 76, 77
 Vernoyolle taken and retaken, 7, 8, 9
 Vincennes taken by the French, 53
 Urswickie, Christopher, employed in the cause of Hen. VII. 197
- Wainflete, William, bishop of Winchester, his character and good deeds, 74
 Wakefield, battle of, 108
- Wales, the lieutenancy of, promised to Richard Thomas, 217
 Warde, John, 142
 Warwick, Edward earl of, 188
 —— imprisoned in Sheriff Hutton castle, 188
 Warwick, Henry duke of, dics, 94
 Warwick, Richard earl of, 41
 —— dies at Rouen, 62
 Warwick, Richard Neville earl of, 94
 —— marriage and issue of, 95
 —— affray made upon by some of the queen's household, 101
 —— repairs to Calais, *ibid.*
 —— confers with the duke of York in Ireland, 106
 —— his mission to France to demand Bone of Savoy for the king in marriage, 116
 —— returns and becomes hostile to K. Edw. IV., 118
 —— flies with the duke of Clarence to France, 128
 —— his return and arrival at Dartmouth, 129, 132
 —— sets Henry VI. at liberty, 133
 —— made protector of the realm, 134
 —— heavy and troubled in heart, 143
 —— fights the battle of Barnet and is slain, 143, 145, 146
 Warwick, town of, surprised by King Edw. IV., 141
 Welles, John, 200
 Welles, Richard, 126
 —— beheaded, 127

INDEX.

- Welles, sir Robert, 126
 Wenlock, John lord, 148
 ——— slain at Tewkesbury, 152
 Wentworth, sir Eustace, 109
 Weymouth, 147
 Willoughbie, Robert, 7
 Willoughby, Robert lord, 42, 43, 50, 51,
 59
 ——— surrenders Paris, 59, 60
 ——— spoils the country about
 Amiens, 67
 Woodstock, Thomas of. *See Gloucester.*
 Woodvill, sir Edward, 200, 208
 Wylloughbie, sir Robert, 200
- York, citizens of, deceived by Edw. IVth.
 139, 140
 — Rich. III. summons a parliament
 at, 190
- York, college founded at, by Richard
 III., 192
 York, Richard duke of, 36, 66
 — with Edmund duke of Somerset,
 made regents of France, 58, 59
 — aspires to the crown, 86, 87
 — met by the King's army, 88
 — brought prisoner to London, but
 discharged, 89, 90
 — again revives his claims, 93, 94
 — in arms against the King, 95
 — brings the King to London, 95,
 96, 97
 — gathers a new army, 103
 — goes to Ireland, 104
 — with the earl of Salisbury, pro-
 claimed traitors, 105
 — claims the crown in parliament,
 but is made protector, 107
 — slain at Wakefield, 108
 Yorkshire, stir raised in, 121

LONDON :

J. B. NICHOLS AND SON, 25, PARLIAMENT STREET.

DA Camden Society, London
20 Publications,
C17
no.29

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY
